An exploration of Teachers' Thoughts, Feelings and Behaviours when Working with Selectively Mute Children

Reem Olivia Dean

Cardiff University

(Word Count: 37, 349)

Acknowledgements

I would like to thank all the teachers who gave their time to participate in this study and the Special Educational Needs Co-ordinators who facilitated the recruitment process. I would also like to thank my thesis supervisor Simon Griffey for his advice, guidance and feedback. Thanks are also due to Tony Cline, Catherine Butler and Sally Brewer for their advice and assistance. Finally, I would like to extend my thanks to my family for their support and encouragement and in particular my mother who has always been a source of unconditional optimism.

Abstract

The purpose of the current research was to explore teachers' experiences of working with selectively mute children in primary and nursery school settings. In particular, participants' experiences were organised into the concepts, thoughts, feelings and behaviours and whether there were mediating factors which influenced the kind of experiences teachers had. The research also explored if these experiences changed and developed over time.

The design was a semi-structured interview technique. The sample consisted of 20 primary and nursery teachers in England and Wales who had previous (N= 9) and current experiences (N= 11) of working with a selectively mute child. The data were coded using Nvivo software and analysed using Thematic Analysis (Braun & Clarke, 2006).

The data indicated that thoughts consisted of teachers' causal attributions for the development of Selective Mutism, their expectations, their perceptions of the selectively mute child, their parents and siblings, and their perceptions of their professional role and that of the educational psychologist (EP). Frustration and anxiety were the most frequently cited feelings and therefore it may be argued that working with a selectively mute child is a stressful experience when teachers are uncertain of the best course of action and when they feel unsupported. Teachers' behaviours consisted of the strategies they used to communicate with the child and to enable the child to access the curriculum. Thoughts, feelings and behaviours changed and developed over time. Several factors were identified which served to mediate teachers' experiences including levels of teacher-child attachment, levels of pupil and parental engagement, the context and involvement from outside agencies.

Contents

CHAPTER 1: INTRODUCTION	
1.1. Chapter Summary	1
1.2. Aims, Rationale & Justification for the Study	1
1.3. Remainder of the thesis	6
CHAPTER 2: LITERATURE REVIEW	
2.1. Chapter Summary	7
2.2. Justification for areas reviewed	7
2.3. Key Sources	8
2.4. What is Selective Mutism?	8
2.4.1. The historical context of SM	8
2.4.2. The condition of SM	9
2.4.3. Prevalence rates and long-term outcomes	9
2.4.4. Aetiology of SM	11
2.4.4.1. Developmental	11
2.4.4.2. Psychological	11
2.4.4.3. Familial	13
2.4.5. Interventions	15
2.5. Attachment in the Classroom	17
2.6. Research and Theory Relating to Teachers' Experiences: Thoughts, Feelings and Behaviours	19
2.6.1. Thoughts related to working with a selectively mute child	19
2.6.2. Thoughts related to teaching	20
2.6.2.1. Thoughts and motivations for joining the profession	20
2.6.2.2. Causal attributions for children's misbehaviour & lack of compliance	20
2.6.3. Feelings related to working with a selectively mute child	21

2.6.4. Feelings related to teaching	23
2.6.5. Behaviours related to working with a selectively mute child	25
2.7. Potential Mediating Factors	26
2.8. Research Questions	26
2.8.1. Research question 1	26
2.8.4. Research question 2	27
2.8.5. Research question 3	27
2.9. Chapter Summary	27
CHAPTER 3: METHODOLOGY	
3.1. Chapter Overview	28
3.2. Research Paradigm	28
3.3. Analytical Method	29
3.4. Sample	31
3.5. Instruments	33
3.5.1. Interview schedule	34
3.5.2. Diary schedule	36
3.5.3. Validity of the instruments	37
3.5.3.1. Descriptive validity	37
3.5.3.2. Interpretative validity	37
3.5.3.3. Theoretical & construct validity	38
3.5.3.4. Evaluative validity	38
3.5.3.5. Internal validity	38
3.5.4. Reliability of the instruments	40
3.6. Procedure	41
3.6.1. Recruitment	41
3.6.2. Data collection	42
3.6.3. Analysis	43
3.7. Ethical Issues	46

3.7.1. Consent	46
3.7.2. Anonymity & confidentiality	46
3.7.3. Participant welfare	47
3.7.4. Researcher welfare	47
3.8. Design	48
3.9. Chapter Summary	51
CHAPTER 4: RESULTS	
4.1. Chapter Overview	52
4.2. The Sample	52
4.3. Organisation of Data	54
4.4. Question 1: How Does Working with a Selectively Mute Child Impact on a Teacher's Thoughts?	55
4.4.1. Theme 1. Causal attributions of SM	55
4.4.1.1. Control & manipulation	56
4.4.1.2. Early traumatic incidents, transitions & negative experiences	56
4.4.1.3. Escape & avoidance	57
4.4.1.4. Emotional transference	57
4.4.1.5. Safety, security & protection	58
4.4.1.6. Fear & phobia	58
4.4.1.7. Child's character traits, attitudes & skills	59
4.4.1.8. Adverse home environment	59
4.4.1.9. Social reinforcement	60
4.4.2. Theme 2. Causal attributions of speech	60
4.4.3. Theme 3. Expectations	61
4.4.3.1. Speech expected	61
4.4.3.2. Speech not expected	61
4.4.4. Theme 4. Perceptions of the selectively mute child	62

4.4.5. Theme 5. Participants' projections of the selectively mute	63
child's experiences	
4.4.6. Theme 6. Perception of parents	63
4.4.7. Theme 7. Participants' projections of parents' experiences	63
4.4.8. Theme 8. Perception of the selectively mute child's sibling.	64
4.4.9. Theme 9. Impact on role.	64
4.4.9.1. More approachable & reassuring	65
4.4.9.2. Mothering, caring, nurturing & protecting	65
4.4.9.3. Educating, advising & training	66
4.4.9.4. More aware, skilled & adaptable	66
4.4.9.5. Investigative & problem solving	67
4.4.9.6. Limited, inadequate & lacking autonomy	67
4.4.10. Theme 10. Perceptions of EP's role	67
4.4.10.1. Facilitating processes	68
4.4.10.2. Implementing & modelling intervention programmes	68
4.4.10.3. Observing, assessing & diagnosing	69
4.4.10.4. Lack of autonomy over work	69
4.4.10.5. Gatekeeper to resources	70
4.5. Question 1: How Does Working with a Selectively Mute Child Impact on a Teacher's Feelings?	71
4.5.1. Theme 11. Positive feelings	71
4.5.1.1. Pleased, rewarded & proud	71
4.5.1.2. Supported	72
4.5.1.3. Sense of achievement & relief	72
4.5.1.4. Excited, happy & enthusiastic	73
4.5.1.5. Amazed & surprised	73
4.5.1.6. Empathy & warmth	74
4.5.1.7. Hopeful	74
4.5.1.8. Unconcerned, not worried	75

4.5.0 N 6.1.	7.5
4.5.2. Negative feelings	75
4.5.2.1. Frustrated, anxious, worried, concerned & stressed	76
4.5.2.2. Challenged, panicked, apprehensive, daunted, pressured & overwhelmed	77
4.5.2.3. Unsupported	78
4.5.2.4. Uncertain, unprepared & confused	78
4.5.2.5. Disappointed, sad & upset	79
4.5.2.6. Guilt	79
4.5.2.7. Anger	80
4.6. Question 1: How Does Working with a Selectively Mute Child Impact on a Teacher's Behaviours?	81
4.6.1. Theme 13. Promoted use of child's first language	81
4.6.2. Theme 14. Praise, reward & reinforcement	82
4.6.3. Theme 15. Individualised teaching adaptations	82
4.6.4. Theme 16. Promoting non-verbal communication	83
4.6.5. Theme 17. Delivering Intervention programmes & techniques (EEL technique, sliding in technique, transition programme)	83
4.6.6. Theme 18. Utilising or discouraging the use of intermediaries	84
4.6.7. Theme 19. Provided additional resources for child	85
4.6.8. Theme 20. Utilised transferable skills	85
4.6.9. Theme 21. Inclusive & uniform, whole-class strategies	86
4.6.10. Theme 22. Information seeking	87
4.6.11. Theme 23. Ignoring	87
4.7. Question 2: Do Teacher's Thoughts, Feelings & Behaviours Change & Develop Over Time?	88
4.7.1. Theme 24. Development of thoughts	88
4.7.2. Theme 25. Development of feelings	89
4.7.2.1. Decreased frustration & apprehension	89
4.7.2.2. Increased positivity, confidence & sympathy	90
4.7.3. Theme 26. Development of behaviours	91

4.7.3.1. Strategies remained the same	91
4.7.3.2. Strategies changed	91
4.8. Question 3: What Mediating Factors Influence the Kinds of Experiences Teachers Have?	93
4.8.1. Theme 27. Previous experiences of working with a selectively mute child	93
4.8.2. Theme 28. Attachment levels	95
4.8.3. Theme 29. Access to training & support	96
4.8.4. Theme 30. Levels of parental engagement	97
4.8.4.1. Engaged & supportive	97
4.8.4.2. Non-engaged, avoidant & exacerbating	98
4.8.5. Theme 31. Levels of child engagement	99
4.8.5.1. Communicated with teacher verbally	99
4.8.5.2. Communicated with teacher non-verbally	99
4.8.5.3. Did not communicate with teacher	100
4.8.5.4. Communicated with peers and siblings in school	100
4.8.5.5. Did not communicate with certain groups and individuals	101
4.8.5.6. Communicated with key adults in school	101
4.8.6. Theme 32. Context	102
4.8.6.1. Nursery versus primary	102
4.8.6.2. Lesson/subject	103
4.8.6.3. Location in school	104
4.8.7. Theme 33. Involvement with outside agencies	105
4.8.7.1. Useful	105
4.8.7.2. Not useful	105
4.8. Chapter Summary	106

CHAPTER 5: DISCUSSION	
5.1. Chapter Overview	107
5.2. The Distinctiveness of Concepts as Compositions of the Term Experience	107
5.3. Question 1: How Does Working with a Selectively Mute Child Impact on a Teacher's Thoughts?	109
5.3.1. Causal attributions of SM	109
5.3.2. Causal attributions of speech	113
5.3.3. Expectations	114
5.3.4. Perceptions of the selectively mute child	114
5.3.5. Participants' projections of the selectively mute child's experiences	115
5.3.6. Perception of parents	115
5.3.7. Participants' projections of parents' experiences	116
5.3.8. Perception of the selectively mute child's sibling	116
5.3.9. Impact on role	116
5.3.10. Perceptions of EP's role	117
5.4. Question 1: How does working with a selectively mute child impact on a teacher's feelings?	119
5.4.1. Positive Feelings	119
5.4.2. Negative Feelings	120
5.5. Question 1: How Does Working with a Selectively Mute Child Impact on a Teacher's Behaviours?	124
5.5.1. Promoted use of child's first language	124
5.5.2. Praise, reward & reinforcement	124
5.5.3. Individualised teaching adaptations	124
5.5.4. Promoting non-verbal communication	125
5.5.5. Intervention programmes and techniques (EEL technique, sliding in technique, transition programme)	125
5.5.6. Utilising or discouraging the use of intermediaries	125
5.5.7. Provided additional resources for child	126
	1

5.5.8. Utilised transferable skills	126
5.5.9. Inclusive & uniform, whole-class strategies	126
5.5.10. Information seeking	127
5.5.11. Ignoring	127
5.6. Question 2: Do Teachers' Thoughts, Feelings & Behaviours Change & Develop Over Time?	129
5.6.1. Development of thoughts	129
5.6.2. Development of feelings	129
5.6.3. Development of behaviours	129
5.7. Question 3: What Mediating Factors Influence the Kinds of Experiences Teachers Have?	130
5.7.1. Previous experiences of working with a selectively mute child.	130
5.7.2. Attachment levels	130
5.7.3. Access to training & support	131
5.7.4. Levels of parental engagement	131
5.7.5. Levels of child engagement	132
5.7.6. Context	132
5.8. Research Limitations	133
5.9. Research Strengths	135
5.10. Researcher's Reflective & Reflexive Thoughts	136
5.11. Chapter Summary	138
CHAPTER 6: CONCLUSIONS	
6.1. Chapter Summary	139
6.2. Relevance of Theory	139
6.3. Further Research	141
6.4. Practical Implications	143
6.4.1. Implications for psychology.	143
6.4.1.1. Further research.	143
6.4.2. Implications for education.	144

Appendix N: Themes & Sub-Themes Identified from Codes for Question 2	240
Appendix O: Themes & Sub-Themes Identified from Codes for Question 3	241
Appendix P: The Final 33 Themes Identified from the Data Set & Explanation of Theme Contents	246

List of Figures & Tables

Figure 1. Padesky & Mooney's cognitive model (1990)	4
Figure 2. Researcher's model adapted from the cognitive model (Padesky & Mooney, 1990)	4
Table 1. Teacher's primary and secondary feelings elicited as a result of working with a selectively mute child as described by Cline and Baldwin (1998).	22
Figure 3. Representation of the interview schedule	35
Figure 4. Representation of the diary schedule	36
Figure 5. Flow chart of the hierarchical recruitment process	41
Figure 6. Representation of Morrison's (1993) five continua for conceptualising interviews	49
Table 2. Participant demographics	53
Figure 7. Thematic map illustrating the themes and sub-themes identified in relation to teachers' thoughts	55
Figure 8. Thematic map illustrating the themes and sub-themes identified in relation to teachers' feelings	71
Figure 9. Thematic map illustrating the 11 themes identified in relation to teachers' behaviours.	81
Figure 10. Thematic map illustrating the three themes and four subthemes identified in relation to question 2.	88
Figure 11. Thematic map illustrating the themes and sub-themes identified in relation to question 3.	93

Nomenclature List

APA = American Psychological Association

BPS = British Psychological Society

EP = Educational Psychologist

EPS = Educational Psychology Service

SM= Selective Mutism

CBT = Cognitive Behavioural Therapy

CI = Critical Incident

CIT = Critical Incident Technique

COMOIRA = Constructionist Model of Informed Reasoned Actions

DECP = Division of Educational and Child Psychology

DfE = Department for Education

DfES = Department for Education and Skills

DSM = Diagnostic Statistical Manual

DSM IV TR = Text Revision of the Fourth Diagnostic Statistical Manual

HT = Head Teacher

ICD = International Classification of Diseases

LA = Local Authority

NQT = Newly Qualified Teacher

OFSTED = Office for Standards in Education, Children's Services and Skills

SATs = Standard Attainment Tests

SENCo = Special Educational Needs Co-ordinator

TA = Teaching Assistant

TA = Thematic Analysis

TaMHS = Targeted Mental Health in School

TEP = Trainee Educational Psychologist

UK = United Kingdom

USA = United States of America

Introduction

1.1. Chapter Summary

This chapter explores the theoretical significance of the research topic and its relevance to educational psychology, the field of psychology in general, education and the role of the EP. The chapter ends with an introduction to the structure of the remainder of the thesis.

1.2. Aims, Rationale & Justification for the Study

The current research explores how two major recipients of educational psychology services (EPSs), namely nursery and primary teachers, responded to the challenges of working with selectively mute children, by conducting semi-structured interviews and drawing relevant themes using Thematic Analysis (TA).

Numerous retrospective studies have researched the experiences of adults who were diagnosed with Selective Mutism (SM) as children (e.g., Crumley, 1990), including case studies of children having experienced SM (e.g., Omdal & Galloway, 2007; Walters, 2002). There is however, a paucity of research regarding the experiences of teaching staff working with selectively mute children. As such, the significance and originality of the present study, is the investigation of the accounts and narratives of teachers who have worked with selectively mute children on a full-time basis as opposed to retrospective accounts of adults who had experiences of having SM as children. Also, research exploring teachers' perceptions of working with selectively mute children, (Buck, 1987; Edmondson, 1986) have consisted of unpublished theses and dissertations. Whilst no inferences are made as to the quality of Buck (1987) and Edmondson's (1986) research, there is however, greater merit and value placed on published articles which have undergone peer review and acceptance by reputable journals. As Cline and Baldwin (1998) state, "In contrast to the numerous

descriptions of selectively mute children ... there has been very little written about the ... effect on teachers and others in school" (p. 70). This position has changed little over the years as Cleave (2009) recently wrote, "There is little empirical evidence about teachers' perceptions" (p. 235). Therefore, there is a need for high quality, comprehensive research regarding the impact of SM on teaching staff.

Additionally, having a better understanding of teachers' experiences may in the future help to inform the formulation of effective interventions, most of which are currently school based (e.g., the sliding-in technique, the talking circle, the walkabout technique). Resource manuals aimed at teachers and parents (e.g., Johnson & Wintgens, 2001) often give practical suggestions such as stimulus fading but fail to explore the emotional impact on teachers of dealing with selectively mute children in their class. Teachers may experience self-blame by interpreting that their accommodating behaviour towards selectively mute children may have helped to maintain and reinforce the mute behaviour, a phenomenon reported by Cline and Baldwin (1998). Therefore, there are conflicting views expressed within the literature between giving the selectively mute child preferential treatment such as responding to non-verbal responses, versus ignoring the mutism and maintaining equal expectations. Omdal and Galloway (2007) reported that teachers were unsure regarding the amount of pressure they should put on a selectively mute child to speak. Therefore, the findings of the current research could help to inform treatment planning and resolve some of this uncertainty.

Despite some teacher's expectancies that the symptomatic shyness will improve with age (Kumpulainen, Rasanen, Raaska & Somppi, 1998), spontaneous remission is unlikely (Bergman, Piacentini & McCracken, 2002) and lack of intervention is likely to have a long-term detrimental impact on the child's social development (Cline & Baldwin, 1998). Therefore, teachers are likely to be pre-occupied with this issue for a long time and therefore seek assistance from an EP. This is especially pertinent as SM was initially believed to be a

rare condition, with EPs likely to encounter a child with SM once every four to five years (Imich, 1998). Yet, it is anticipated that this figure may be larger and increasing in the changing demographic population of the UK. For instance, there were 591,000 long-term immigrants who entered the UK as reported in the 2001 census, and Bradley and Sloman (1975) found a higher prevalence of SM in immigrant families. Therefore, there is likely to be a higher incidence rate of SM among this population and this may compound the difficulties for teaching staff as they strive to overcome both the language comprehension and expressive difficulties of these children.

Another purpose for conducting the current research, is that the literature suggests working with a selectively mute child can be a very stressful experience; Baldwin (1985) stated that, "The presence of a mute child has a powerful effect on teachers' feelings and often generates intense reactions" (p. 70). Cline and Baldwin (1998) argue that anger can become self-directed and lead to feelings such as self-blame. They state that the school culture may interpret persistent shyness as rudeness and defiance and teachers may view the shy and anxious behaviour as controlling and manipulative. Cline and Baldwin (1998) argue that it may be easier for teachers to accept the needs of physically and learning disabled children because their behaviour is equally pervasive across all contexts. Yet, an intentional refusal to verbally engage may be interpreted as, "wilful defiance and a threat to teachers' authority" (Cleave, 2009, p. 235). This defiance could impact on the teacher-pupil relationship if they become engaged in a, "battle of wills" (Imich, 1998, p. 58). Therefore, teaching staff may experience unexpected levels of anger towards the child (Baldwin & Cline, 1998).

In order to explore the broad concept of 'experience', a structure was utilised including the concepts of thoughts, feelings and behaviours of teaching staff, their interpretations of events and their perceived views of the child and parents. These were based on Padesky and Mooney's (1990) cognitive model (figure 1).

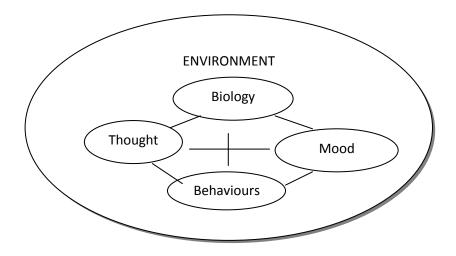


Figure 1. Padesky & Mooney's Cognitive Model (1990)

The model was adapted to focus on the three aforementioned factors within a systemic framework (figure 2). Throughout the research, the terms emotions and feelings are used interchangeably and the terms are taken to denote the same meanings. This also applies to the terms thoughts and cognitions. As the interviews were retrospective, the biological or physiological elements were not included although familial factors are considered based on teachers' accounts. It would have been difficult for teaching staff to track physiological changes as indicators of stress (e.g., increased heart rate or skin conductance) or measures of emotional, physiological and psychological arousal.

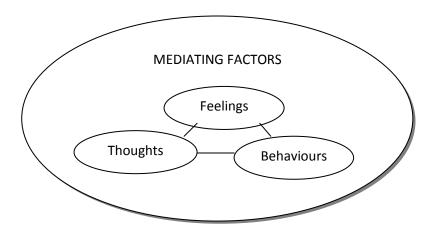


Figure 2. Researcher's model adapted from the Cognitive Model (Padesky & Mooney, 1990)

In addition to exploring thoughts, feelings and behaviours, the research explored potential mediating factors. These included mediating factors within teachers such as the duration of

work experience, level and relevance of teacher training, and attribution style. Mediating factors within the child were also explored such as co-morbidity of conditions. SM has been associated with developmental disorder/delay (29%), speech and language disorder/delay (50%), developmental co-ordination disorder (17%), Asperger Syndrome (7%) and elimination disorders (30%, Kristensen, 2000). Also, Dummit, Kelin, Tancer, Asche and Fairbanks (1997) reported that considering abuse as the primary cause of SM, resulted in tension and frustration between parents and the school. Further, Cline and Baldwin (1998) suggest that very skilled and experienced teachers may be more likely to miss the early signs of mutism as they are more responsive to the non-verbal communication of shy children and often extend the period of time over which lack of speech is acceptable as a time to settle into school. Cline and Baldwin (1998) argued that, "Infant teachers are particularly patient about waiting for children to settle. They develop skills in building warm relationships with shy children through encouraging and responding to non-verbal communication. They will use these well-tried and previously successful strategies to help children to relax and communicate, while at the same time looking for opportunities to develop their language skills. Unfortunately, this makes it easier for selectively mute children to obtain everything they want without speech (because the teacher's strengths, in effect, reinforce the mutism)" (p. 76). Therefore, it is paradoxical that teachers who are more skilled are also more likely to miss the early signs of SM.

Another mediating factor may be the teacher's level of concern and awareness of SM. For example, Cline and Baldwin (1998) state that when teachers retrospect, they sometimes cannot recall the point at which the child's behaviour began to cause them concern. It was hypothesised that teachers who were concerned for a longer period of time would have experienced more stress and anxiety than teachers who had relatively little concern. Therefore, the greater the concern, the greater the anxiety. Also, teachers may have

experienced greater anxiety if they: a) could not deal effectively with the behaviour, b) had experienced failure in their attempts such as trying to bribe the child to speak. As Cline and Baldwin (1998) state, "These were often promises of prizes for speaking, but as the children were unable to utter a word they never tasted the reward. There might be plans to bribe, trick or trap the child into speaking" (p. 78), c) were aware that they lacked the skills or competencies to resolve the mutism (such as being within the 'conscious incompetence' stage of the Conscious Competence Learning Model (Businessballs, accessed 5th December, 2010). The Conscious Competence Learning Model proposes four levels of learning beginning with unconscious incompetence, conscious incompetence, conscious competence and unconscious competence. It is hypothesised that staff at the conscious incompetence stage of the model will be the most stressed as this is the most anxiety provoking stage of the model as opposed to teachers who remain for a long time unaware of the child's mutism. Cline and Baldwin (1998) also argue that infant teachers may experience greater isolation because they are unlikely to have dealt with selectively mute children before.

1.3. Remainder of the thesis

Relevant literature is now reviewed in relation to the research topic. This is followed by a description of the qualitative research method procedure and the results. The conceptual tool that was used to analyse the data was Thematic Analysis (Braun & Clarke, 2006). The remainder of the thesis consists of a discussion of the key findings and a concluding summary.

2. Literature Review

2.1. Chapter Summary

The literature review begins with a description of SM including its prevalence, aetiology and treatment. It considers the literature relevant to teachers' thoughts, feelings and behaviours which are the main components chosen to define the term 'experience' and which inform the interview schedule. As teachers' experiences of working with selectively mute children is an area which has very limited research, other areas of teaching are also explored such as the teacher stress literature as it is anticipated that working with selectively mute children is a stressful experience and therefore such studies would be pertinent to the current research. Therefore, key theories and studies are cited and critically evaluated which link directly to the research questions. Finally, the research examines relevant literature regarding the epistemological stance taken by the current research.

2.2. Justification for areas reviewed

The areas reviewed are justified because they are based upon the main topic of the thesis (Selective Mutism) and they relate to the research questions exploring the impact of working with selectively mute children on teachers. In particular, literature regarding teacher stress is reviewed as it is argued that this is pertinent to the second research question related to teachers' feelings.

It is beyond the scope of the review to cite in great detail medical interpretations of SM as it is not in line with the epistemological stance of the and it is beyond the scope of the review to evaluate specific intervention techniques in detail. Therefore, a brief outline of techniques is provided.

2.3. Key Sources

The key sources used to conduct the literature review included PsycARTICLES, PsycINFO, ERIC and Medline. Search terms included "Elective Mutism", "Selective Mutism", "teacher stress" and "teaching selectively mute children". Literature is also cited from workshops, seminars and presentations from the Division of Educational and Child Psychology (DECP) annual development event themed 'Doing it Differently: Changes in EP practice and service delivery' in 2011, and the event in 2012 themed 'Change in mind: Changing times'. Previous authors were also contacted in order to access and ask questions relating to unpublished research. For instance, Professor Tony Cline was contacted regarding citation in his published book "Selective Mutism in Children" (1998) and therefore access was gained to the Buck (1987) and Edmondson (1986) articles.

2.4. What is Selective Mutism?

2.4.1. The historical context of SM.

SM was first recognised and classified by Kassmaul (1877, as cited in Dow, Sonies, Scjeob, Moss & Leonard, 1995) as 'aphasia voluntairia'. Subsequently, between 1877 and 1934, Tramer (1934, as cited in Dow, Sonies, Scjeob, Moss & Leonard, 1995) named the condition as 'elektiver mutismum' or 'elective mutism' and this was logged in the International Classification of Diseases-10 (ICD, World Health Organisation, 1992). The term was then reclassified to Selective Mutism in 1994 following publication of the fourth Diagnostic and Statistical Manual of Mental Disorders (DSM IV TR, American Psychological Association).

2.4.2. The condition of SM.

Shyness among children on school entry is a common phenomenon (Kopp & Gillberg, 1997). Manifestations of shyness may include a reluctance to speak or at the extreme, a complete refusal. This can be greatly problematic in the school context and if sustained beyond the developmentally appropriate shyness and caution exhibited by children starting school, then the behaviour is classified as a distinct condition termed Selective Mutism (Cline & Baldwin, 1998). SM is a condition characterised by an individual's refusal to speak in certain contexts and to certain people despite the ability to do so. The most recent revision of the DSM IV TR (2000), posits that the criteria for the diagnosis of SM require the behaviour to have been exhibited for a duration of more than a month, for the displayed behaviour to interfere with educational achievement, and for the condition to not be a result of a communication or psychotic disorder (APA, 1994). The presenting characteristics of selective mutes also include distinct behaviours such as the "freeze-defence" stance hypothesised to originate as an animal's reflexive response to danger (Lesser-Katz, 1986). Lesser-Katz (1986) described the "freeze-defence" as a selectively mute child's anxious response to strangers and included timidity, passivity and withdrawal.

2.4.3. Prevalence rates and long-term outcomes.

The incidence of SM is somewhat rare (Cleave, 2009) and is more common in girls than boys (Cline & Baldwin, 1998). A survey conducted by Brown and Lloyd (1975) found prevalence rates of 0.7% in four and five year olds demonstrating mutism eight weeks into the school term. This did however reduce to 0.1% after an eight month follow up. Yet, the criterion of completely mute at school utilised by the survey, is not compatible with previous or current DSM criteria for the diagnosis of SM. Also, SM may be more common than initially

perceived as research in Scandinavia by Kopp and Gillberg (1997) reported prevalence rates of 0.2% in seven to 15 year-old children and young people. More recent American research has also cited higher prevalence rates of 0.7% within the first three years of school entry (Cleave, 2009).

However, prevalence studies need to be interpreted with some caution due to the variability between countries in school entry age which limits generalisability (Cleave, 2009) and selective mutes being a very heterogenous group. For instance, researchers have called for a more refined taxonomy of SM including the sub-types anxious-mildly oppositional, anxious-communication delayed and anxious (Cohan, Chavira, Shipon-Blum, Hitchcock, Roesch et al., 2008).

The average age of referral is nine years (Kumpulainen et al., 1998) although it is most frequently recognised at school entry age (Imich, 1998) as evidenced from a child's refusal to speak to educational staff and peers. It has been argued however, that SM begins at an earlier age and is exhibited as abnormal timidity (Kolvin & Fundudis, 1981). The child's timidity can lead them to excessively seek the mother's reassurance and when this is provided can serve to reinforce the child's fear of strangers (Lesser-Katz, 1986).

Although SM is most commonly found in children, research suggests that there remains an impact in adulthood as adults who had SM as children, are at risk of continuing to experience communication difficulties such as experiencing difficulty speaking in certain contexts and to certain people, and in social gatherings where they do not feel comfortable (Ford, Sladeczek, Carlson & Kratochwill, 1998).

Additional research has found that those who exhibited social and behavioural difficulties in childhood are more likely to suffer from mental health problems in adulthood (Buchanan, 2000). Such pupils are also more likely to engage in a range of activities including engaging

in crime and anti-social behaviour and misuse of alcohol and drugs (Buchanan, 2000). However, mental health problems such as anxiety, depression, stress and eating disorders can be reduced in pupils, and consequently teachers, through developing the pupils' emotional well-being.

2.4.4. Aetiology of SM.

There is no singular cause identified for the development of SM, although research suggests a multi-factorial aetiology including the contribution of developmental, psychological and familial factors.

2.4.4.1. Developmental.

Developmental factors implicated in the aetiological explanations of SM include developmental delay, language and motor difficulties. For example, 68% of Kristensen's (2000) selectively mute sample of children also met the diagnostic criteria for developmental delay. Additional developmental factors identified by Manassis, Tannock, Garland, Minde and McInnes (2007), were significantly lower scores for receptive language skills, grammar and phonemic awareness in comparison to a matched control sample. Manassis et al. (2007) also found an association between social anxiety and SM lending support for a psychological interpretation of the causes of SM which are described and discussed in the following section.

2.4.4.2. Psychological.

There are several psychological factors proposed to describe the aetiology of SM, the most

prominent of which are anxiety and oppositionality, although the latter is a less common factor (Cleave, 2009). For instance, Oppositional Defiant Disorder (ODD) was not a common diagnosis in Black and Uhde's (1995) study and some research has found that teachers reported children with SM as less oppositional (Cunningham, McHolm, Boyle & Patel, 2004). It has been argued, that instead of oppositionality being a primary facet of SM, it is simply a consequence of the children's attempts to avoid anxiety-provoking situations (Dummit et al., 1997).

With regard to anxiety, Kristensen (2000) found that in a sample of 54 selectively mute children, 74.1% also met the diagnostic criteria for anxiety, particularly social phobia followed by separation anxiety, in comparison with two matched control groups of whom less than 10% met the diagnostic criteria for anxiety. It has been suggested that SM should be classified as a form of social anxiety, in particular, a sub-type of social phobia (Black & Uhde, 1995). Yet, Yeganeh, Beidel, Turner, Pina and Silverman (2003) compared a sample of 46 children split into a group of children with SM and co-morbid social phobia, and the second with social phobia alone and found that despite more severe social fears, the co-morbid children were not more anxious. Also, they found that a sub-group of the co-morbid children easily interacted non-verbally with others. Therefore, SM is now believed to be a behavioural expression of social anxiety (Cleave, 2009; Dummit et al., 1997).

However, Omdal and Galloway (2007) argued that anxiety was related to expressive speech as opposed to a general social phobia. They found a high degree of autonomy in selectively mute children in utilising their body language including facial expressions and gestures to communicate with others. However, the limits of these claims lie in the small sample size which consisted of five selectively mute children and six adults whose retrospective accounts met the diagnostic criteria for SM. Further limitations of the aforementioned studies relate to potentially biased samples which were conducted in psychiatric clinics and the limited inter-

rater reliability of the anxiety measures completed by key stake holders including clinicians, parents and teachers (Cleave, 2009). Studies have also reported little concordance between selectively mute children's anxiety ratings and those ascribed by the key adults involved with the child (e.g., Omdal & Galloway, 2007; Yeganeh et al., 2003). This is unsurprising as similar incongruencies in reporting of symptoms have been reported in other conditions such as Attention Decifit/Hyperacitvity Disorder (ADHD) between the reports of adolescents and their parents (Rasmussen, Todd, Neuman, Heath, Reich et al., 2002).

Another psychological interpretation emanates from social learning theory (Bandura, 1977) which explains SM as a method to reduce fear and anxiety (Blotcky & Looney, 1980). Adaptive, non-verbal behaviour would be explained by learning theory as a technique to manipulate the environment in place of language (Friedman & Karagan, 1973). Reed and Mees (1967) were the first to argue that SM could be a learned behaviour pattern and that teachers maintain mutism through social reinforcement. This was also proposed by Omdal and Galloway (2007) who stated that the school context served to reinforce mute behaviour. Also, Cline and Baldwin (1998) argued that teachers' adaptive strategies such as responsiveness to non-verbal behaviour could help to maintain and reinforce the mutism.

In contrast, psychodynamic approaches explain SM as a fixation during the anal libido stage (Spasaro & Schaefer, 1999) and highlight control as a key feature of the condition (Anthony, 1977). Control may serve to facilitate rapprochement by influencing the adult figure to be more receptive (Shreeve, 1999).

2.4.4.3. Familial.

Family psychopathology has been the most frequently cited causal explanation for the

development of SM (Spasaro, Platt & Schaefer, 1999) such as a higher incidence of bereavement in addition to family stress during childhood (Walters, 2002). Parents of selectively mute children have also been found to have personality characteristics indicative of social anxiety and excessive shyness in comparison to controls (Kristensen & Torgersen, 2001) and were three to four times more likely to have general social phobia and avoidant personality disorder (Chavira, Shipon-Blum, Hitchcock, Cohan & Stein, 2007). Also, Goll (1979) hypothesised that selectively mute children imitated the model of distrusting others set by their parents and was exhibited through inhibition with strangers.

The literature also states several rationales for the development of SM which are centred around the mother-child symbiotic relationship characterised by closeness, control and dependency (Clemente, Brafman & Cohen, 1986) and is due to the failure of separation and individuation (Wright, 1968). There is a degree of consensus that SM arises at an early age during the infant's primary phase of attachment (Shreeve, 1999) and studies lend further support to a dysfunctional mother-child symbiotic relationship and interactions (Antoynatan, 1986). One example is parental mis-attunement resulting in irregular parent-infant interactions (Lichtenberg, 1989).

More recent research has not revealed any structural or functional differences between the families of children with SM and controls (Cunningham et al., 2004). An exceptional finding however, is a higher prevalence rate of SM within immigrant families (Bradley & Sloman, 1975). This may be because the immigration process may leave a family feeling isolated in a community resulting in the child adopting mutism as a response to challenge (Cline & Baldwin, 1998). Alternatively, families may experience a "culture shock" leading the parents to feel anxious and depressed and there may be emotional transference onto their dependents (Bradley & Sloman, 1975).

Within the developmental, psychological and familial factors there are predisposing aspects such as physical or psychological trauma (Black & Uhde, 1995), precipitating aspects such as during periods of transition and maintaining factors such as social reinforcement. Within these factors, there are corresponding interventions which are described in the next section.

2.4.5. Interventions.

Intervention techniques for SM which aim to reduce anxiety have been shown to produce the most successful outcomes (Cohan, Price & Stein, 2006a). Behavioural interventions have been advocated as being effective in treating SM (Cohan et al., 2006a) while others have endorsed Cognitive Behavioural Therapy (CBT) techniques to treat anxiety disorders (Ishikawa, Okajima, Matsouka & Sakano, 2007). It may be argued that EPs are well placed to provide therapeutic work at the individual child level enabling them to offer a wider range of services (Mackay, 2007, 2009). Interventions at a systemic level may be more effective in promoting long-term change and help to move away from a within-child deficit model. For instance, Yeganeh et al. (2003) proposed parent training and behaviour modification programmes to facilitate anxiety reduction and address oppositionality. In addition, Cleave (2009) recommended interventions which aimed to increase verbal and non-verbal communication as well as social interaction.

Specifically to the school and home context, Johnson and Wintgens (2001) recommended considering several factors for creating the right environment to encourage selectively mute children to feel comfortable. These include:

- Audience familiarity. Selectively mute children are most likely to speak to familiar
 adults such as their family and are more likely to speak to unfamiliar adults
 following frequent and regular contact.
- 2. *Gender*. Many selectively mute children find it less difficult to speak to women rather than men irrespective of status or levels of familiarity.
- 3. *Location*. This refers to the levels of privacy as opposed to the physical context and selectively mute children are more likely to speak in areas of greater privacy.
- 4. *Expectation of response*. Selectively mute children are likely to feel anxious when an immediate response is required and feeling pressurised can lead them to freeze when asked a direct question.
- Eye-contact. Selectively mute children feel pressurised when watched and find it
 easier to respond when the adult they are communicating with does not make
 direct eye contact.
- 6. *Decision making*. Many children with SM have difficulty with making decisions and benefit from having the choice of options restricted.

Aetiological explanations and their corresponding interventions emanating from developmental, psychological and familial explanations have been described. It is therefore pertinent to highlight the role of children's early experiences and emotional well-being and how this impacts on their attachment formation and performance in school. Also, it is important to understand both teachers' and children's prior experiences and relationships which can help or hinder the learning experience (Geddes, 2006). Therefore, the next section considers the nature of attachment particularly in the classroom. The literature review will then provide a detailed consideration of the teaching literature and it's pertinence to the current research.

2.5. Attachment in the Classroom

The initial attachment is formed between a baby and its primary caregiver, usually the mother. Attachment describes the bonding process between two individuals and the mother's role in helping to 'contain' the child's emotions when they felt overwhelmed by them, resulting in the child's anxiety being diminished and restoring a sense of safety and security (Bion, 1967). As the child develops, the role then extends to utilising language as an accessible tool to transform feelings of fear into thoughts (Geddes, 2006) which are more accessible to being rationalised.

Such early experiences impact greatly on the school context and the relationship with the class teacher. For instance, studies by Sroufe (1983) on a sample of pre-school children found that children who had experienced a maternal secure attachment as infants scored more highly on ego-resilience and self-esteem, were less dependent on their teacher but conversely displayed more positive affect towards them. Teachers responded by viewing such children as more co-operative and more easy to manage. It was predicted that teachers' feelings could be mediated by the levels of attachment they form with the selectively mute child.

On the other hand, Sroufe (1983) also found qualitative differences in maladaptive patterns of interaction as indicators of attachment quality which were predictors of behaviour in preschool mostly culminating in problematic behaviour. Additionally, it was found that children who had experienced insecure attachments were less confident and more uncertain when faced with challenges and adversities than securely attached children.

One explanation for Sroufe's (1983) findings are that anxious children transfer the role of specific attachment figure to their teacher (Barret & Trevitt, 1991). The novelty of a learning task and the consequential anxiety elicited, simulates the analogues early experiences of the child. A teacher who is sensitive and skilful, will provide the child with a secure base,

support them through the uncertainty, resolve the confusion and thereby restore a sense of safety (Geddes, 2006). Enabling the child to experience success, excitement, enjoyment and manageable levels of anxiety which are ameliorated upon satisfactory task completion as opposed to overwhelming the child, serve to increase the child's sense of efficacy, self-worth and resilience in enduring feelings of frustration, challenge and uncertainty in the future (Geddes, 2006). Teachers are well-placed to promote the development of these emotional and social skills due to the long-term nature of their relationships with children in preparation for later life (Geddes, 2006). Geddes (2006) provides details on practical strategies teachers can utilise to establish the classroom as a safe base for the child depending on the nature of the maladaptive attachment style of the child whether it be avoidant, resistant/ambivalent or disorganised/disorientated.

Despite the weighty implications of considering attachment for classroom practice, the consequences are not for teachers to become therapists (Geddes, 2006). However, as Geddes (2006) states, "But teachers can work therapeutically with greater insight and understanding of pupils' difficulties and experiences" (p.135). It is argued that EPs are in an advantageous position to provide teachers with such insight through the dissemination of psychological advice and guidance on teaching practices.

The literature review now considers the theory and research related to teachers' experiences of teaching generally and working with a selectively mute child.

2.6. Research and Theory Relating to Teachers' Experiences: Thoughts, Feelings and Behaviours

2.6.1. Thoughts related to working with a selectively mute child.

There are limited data relating to teachers' thoughts relating to their work with selectively mute children. However, Kumpulainen et al. (1998) stated that teachers initially expect children's shyness will improve over time and this may consequentially lead to the teacher making curriculum allowances which serve to reinforce the mute behaviour such as responding to non-verbal responses and teaching in ways that avoid the need for speech. For instance, a teacher may ask a selectively mute child to point to pictures as opposed to asking questions that require a verbal response. The effect is two-fold as child is provided with learning opportunities but has no demands placed on them to change.

Cline and Baldwin (1998) reported that perceptions of the selectively mute child tended to be negative with descriptions including "hostile", "anxious", "challenging" and "stubborn". They also state that, as the school experiences failure in resolving the mutism, so the descriptions of the child become increasingly negative. Also, Cline and Baldwin (1998) argue that over time, the school adopts a more distanced attitude in dealing with the child and family as they experience failure in resolving the mutism. More recently, Cleave (2009) suggests that such responses are not historical as, "learning through language is central to the school curriculum in the UK" (p. 236) thus serving to compound the difficulties experienced by selectively mute children and to elicit strong feelings in their teachers.

Relating to attributions of speech and silence, Shreeve (1999) described that silence in the form of "silent within" (p.135) during adult interactions is often utilised as a form of retaliation for disappointment. Teachers' may also interpret selectively mute children's silence in the same way.

2.6.2. Thoughts related to teaching.

2.6.2.1. Thoughts and motivations for joining the profession.

People choose to join the teaching profession for many reasons including a commitment to a lifetime of teaching and Continuing Professional Development (CPD) or to acquire a profession as part of a "fallback plan". A third category, those who are not convinced of teaching as their vocation, tend to become increasingly disappointed as their training develops (Watt & Richardson, 2008). Watt and Richardson's (2008) sample found that only 46% of individuals were in the first category, those committed to a lifetime of teaching. For trainee teachers, Malmberg (2008) found that motivation correspondingly increased as mastery goals and a sense of competency increased. Once qualified, teachers' motivations included a sense of altruism (Hayes, 2004; Hoy, 2008).

However, teachers can experience conflicts of interest between positions of, "serving and surviving, between caring and control, between deep investment and protective distance" (Hoy, 2008, p. 497). These conflicts may become especially exacerbated when dealing with children who present with challenging behaviour as in the case of selectively mute children.

2.6.2.2. Causal attributions for children's misbehaviour & lack of compliance.

Teachers have a range of attributions regarding the causes of children's misbehaviour and these are often explained as being due to the child's character or to external factors dissociated from the teacher and school (Miller, 2003).

The research of teachers' attributions is an area of great importance because research has demonstrated that teachers' beliefs about their role in influencing the behaviour of the children in their class, can determine their professional commitment and their efficacy

relating to the outcomes for children's learning and achievement (Caprara, Barbaranelli, Steca & Malone, 2006). Therefore, it follows that increasing teachers' efficacy beliefs should have a dual positive impact on themselves and their pupils (Gibbs, 2012). For instance, Miller (1995) stated that teachers are more likely to internally attribute a child's success, explaining it as a result of their own efforts.

2.6.3. Feelings related to working with a selectively mute child.

Feelings are defined as emotional states or reactions. The terms emotions and feelings are used interchangeably during this study but will serve to describe the same phenomenon. The present research recognises that feelings influence thoughts and thoughts influence feelings.

Regarding the literature on teachers' feelings, it may be worth noting firstly that the majority of literature has found the outcome of working with selectively mute children to result in negative feelings.

As previously stated, research suggests that working with a selectively mute child can be a very emotional and potentially stressful experience. Lazarus (1993) defined stress as a state of anxiety elicited as a result of experiencing events and responsibilities which are greater than an individual's coping capabilities. Such individuals often attribute the events as threatening and perceive themselves as lacking the resources to effectively cope with the consequential demands (Lazarus, 1993). Feelings of anxiety, frustration, isolation (particularly in cases when they have not previously taught a selectively mute child before) and helplessness coupled with a lack of experience of teaching a child with SM, can lead teachers to seek support from EPSs. The key emotions described by Cline and Baldwin (1998) are summarised in Table 1.

Table 1. Teachers' primary and secondary feelings elicited as a result of working with a selectively mute child as described by Cline and Baldwin (1998).

Teachers' primary feelings	Teachers' secondary feelings
Embarrassment	
Bewilderment	
Failure	
Isolation	
Resentment	
Distress	
Confusion	
Threat	
Helplessness	
Challenge	
Frustration	Anxiety
Hostility —	
Anger —	Self-blame
Conflicted	

Table 1 shows that teachers experience a range of negative emotions when working with a selectively mute child and these feelings impact on their core professional identity including a lack of self-efficacy as indicated by a sense of helplessness. Geddes (2006) also reports the embarrassment experienced by teachers for whom the challenging behaviour is selectively directed towards their teacher. Those working with the selectively mute child may feel embarrassed because they feel others perceive them as incompetent in eliciting speech from the child in contrast to someone to whom the child is more familiar with.

Additionally, Cline and Baldwin (1998) state that feelings of anger may lead to secondary feelings such as self-blame when the anger elicited by the child's behaviour is directed internally. A possible reason for this may be due to the social and professional unacceptability of overtly demonstrating this feeling. Frustration was another primary feeling which elicited a secondary feeling, in this instance, anxiety.

2.6.4. Feelings related to teaching.

Teaching has been described as a stressful profession and ranked the second most stressful career out of 26 occupations in the UK (Johnson, Cooper, Cartwright, Donald, Taylor et al., 2005). It has also been described as a profession that requires a lot of "emotional labour" (Geddes, 2006). Johnson et al. (2005) revealed that teachers experienced above average levels of stress. In fact, the stress experienced by teachers was found to be higher than both Head Teachers (HTs) and Teaching Assistants (TAs). Teachers reported lower job satisfaction levels than HTs and TAs and the profession was positioned below average regarding job satisfaction (Johnson et al., 2005).

It may be argued that Government initiatives which have aimed to increase accountability and raise standards could have contributed to increased stress in the profession. Research has found that evaluating pupil progress and performance through continuous assessment has increased stress due to the added workload (Moon, Mullee, Thomson, Speller & Roderick, 1999). Government initiatives have included the introductions of 'league tables' as a measure of inter-school academic performance, the National Curriculum (Department for Education & Science, 1988), Standard Attainment Targets (SATs) as part of a system for regular monitoring and testing of pupils, the Foundation Phase curriculum and a revision of A-Levels at the secondary curriculum. Also, the Primary National Strategy launched 'Excellence and Enjoyment; social and emotional aspects of learning' (Department for Education and Skills, DfES, 2005) highlighting the importance of social, emotional and behavioural skills for pupils' development and school improvement. The strategy proposes that pupils who have proficient skills in the aforementioned areas, are more motivated to solve problems independently or with assistance, develop and sustain friendships, be successful learners, be more collaborative in work and play, have greater perseverance and be more likely to overcome difficulties. Evidence shows that pupils who have developed these skills have greater educational and work success, have improved behaviour and learning, are more included and socially cohesive (DfES, 2005). Therefore, teachers have the added responsibilities and pressures to promote the development of these skills in addition to teaching subject-based knowledge. This has possibly been the case because the school's role is often perceived to extend beyond education in relation to academic skills and also develop responsible individuals (Zins, Bloodworth, Weissberg & Walberg's, 2004).

Statistics show that over £700 million was spent on initial teacher training in 2010 (TDA, 2011). Yet, Gibbs (2012) states that just half of those graduates remain in teaching after 5 years and similar, although more conservative estimates of between 40 and 50%, have been found by Ingersoll and Smith (2003). They also state that the profession has historically always lost the majority of its Newly Qualified Teachers (NQTs) early as opposed to later on in their career. For those who do not leave teaching, prolonged stress can lead to adverse consequences such as taking sickness leave from work (Geddes, 2006). The Department for Education state that on average, 4.9 days per teacher are taken per year and over half of the workforce took some sickness leave in 2009 (DfE, 2010).

Studies which have attempted to clarify the reasons for teachers leaving the profession, have found that 29% stated their reasons were due to being dissatisfied with the job and the second most commonly cited source of major stress and dissatisfaction for teachers, was children's behaviour consisting of discipline problems (Gibbs, 2012).

As teaching has been cited as a stressful profession, it follows that numerous studies have focused on the retention and resilience of teachers (Gibbs, 2012). Kieschke and Schaarschmidt (2008) argued that teachers who lacked coping and emotional regulation skills to effectively manage stress, were the most likely to experience exhaustion and burnout even if they had a committed ethos to the teaching profession. In contrast, studies suggest that

teachers who are resilient, are more likely to be effective teachers (Gu & Day, 2007). Therefore, teachers' behaviours are an indicator of their job satisfaction and these teacher behaviours are examined in the next section.

2.6.5. Behaviours related to working with a selectively mute child.

In consideration of previous literature suggesting that working with selectively mute children can be a stressful and anxiety-provoking experience, it is anticipated that teachers will respond by adopting various coping and adaptive behaviours or strategies such as altering their teaching style.

Explanations for the causation of SM suggest that children's withdrawal is a coping response when dealing with the overwhelming anxiety generated by an unfamiliar situation (Looff, 1971). However, this research explores teachers' behavioural reactions and coping mechanisms when the option of withdrawal is not possible for teachers. Instead, research suggests that teachers may help to maintain mutism through responding to non-verbal communication and by providing additional attention (Cline & Baldwin, 1998). It will also consider the effect of selectively mute children's expressive behaviours on teachers such as smiling and looking fearful or having "darting eyes" as described by Cline and Baldwin (1998). Cline and Baldwin (1998) state that teachers may try to teach in ways that work around the child's refusal to speak although such approaches may not be effective in encouraging the child to speak.

Additional teaching adaptations which may serve to reinforce the mutism include accepting the child's silence, not informing parents of concerns and adopting a passive stance through perceived inability to effect change (Omdal & Galloway, 2007). Teachers may also behave

differently to selectively mute children through responding to non-verbal responses in an attempt to help young children settle into school (Cline & Baldwin, 1998).

2.7. Potential Mediating Factors

Potential factors are explored in order to understand whether there are any factors which influence and mediate the kinds of experiences that teachers have. For instance, the duration of teaching experience may be a possible mediating factor as NQTs and recently qualified teachers may have experienced more stress and negative feelings. They may also have had a lower sense of self-efficacy due to less time for having built a bank of mastery experiences and this may have translated to avoidance behaviours. Another mediating factor could be the effect of co-morbid conditions which the selectively mute child may have, leading to a cumulatively stressful effect due to the teacher having to manage the additional demands of the child's multiple conditions.

2.8. Research Questions

The research seeks to answer the question of how nursery and primary teachers, as major recipients of EPSs, respond to the challenges of working with selectively mute children. More specifically, the views of teachers will be sought to answer the following research questions.

2.8.1. Research question 1.

How does working with a selectively mute child impact on a teacher's thoughts, feelings and

behaviours?

2.8.2. Research question 2.

Do teachers' thoughts, feelings and behaviours change and develop over time?

2.8.3. Research question 3.

What mediating factors influence the kinds of experiences teachers have?

2.9. Chapter Summary

The research questions have been generated as a response to the gap in research identified in the literature review and to facilitate understanding within this field of psychology. Chapter 3 describes the methodology employed in order to explore the research questions.

3. Methodology

3.1. Chapter Overview

Chapter 2 reviewed previous literature relating to the nature of SM and teaching. It also identified gaps in the research and how the present study aims to address them through the construction of five research questions. Chapter 3 now describes how these research questions will be answered and provides a justification for the methods used. Details are provided with regard to the sample, the instruments, the data collection method and the analysis. A description of the ethical implications of the research is given and how these are addressed.

3.2. Research Paradigm

A qualitative methodology suited the research because it did not impose or presuppose an objective reality but rather consisted of exploring the subjective realities of the participants. It was important to enable dialogue with participants in order to gain a detailed understanding of their experiences and adopting quantitative methods alone, may have limited the responses elicited. Therefore, instead of testing hypotheses as determined by quantitative methods, the research instead, explored participants' experiences.

A qualitative method was deemed to be the most appropriate way of gathering data because the research is concerned with exploring professionals' constructions and an interview method enabled the researcher to elicit insightful narratives. The prompt questions served as a guide for the interview and enabled participants to pursue thoughts of relevance to themselves without being inhibited. It may also be argued that the prompt questions were required to guide the interview in order to explore in depth the four research questions.

Additionally, the Constructionist Model of Informed Reasoned Action (COMOIRA) (Gameson, Rhydderch, Ellis & Carroll, 2003, 2005; Gameson & Rhydderch, 2008) was used as a framework to guide thinking (Appendix A). In particular, the concepts at the core of the model were applied including systemic thinking (e.g., Burden, 1981), informed and reasoned action and enabling dialogue with participants, through adopting a semi-structured interview method to explore their experiences of working with selectively mute children.

3.3. Analytical Method

The conceptual tool used to analyse the data is Thematic Analysis (Braun & Clarke, 2006). It has been defined as, "a method for indentifying, analyzing and reporting patterns (themes) within data" (Braun & Clarke, 2006, p. 79). A theme is a unit of meaning identified as, "something important about the data in relation to the research question and represents some level of patterned response of meaning within the data set" (Braun & Clarke, 2006, p. 82). The prevalence of themes were considered at the level of the individual item, or per interview, and across the entire data set consisting of 20 interviews. However, these were reported as part of a rich overall description of the data set as opposed to a detailed account of one specific aspect. It may be argued, that some depth and complexity is lost as a result but an overall descriptive method is recommended by Braun and Clarke (2006) when investigating under-researched areas.

Themes were identified through a theoretical or deductive or 'top-down' process as the themes were driven by the researcher's theoretical interests, and some pre-existing coding frames were imposed on the data such as feelings, thoughts and behaviours. Also, the data were coded for the five specific research questions.

Although TA is independent of theory or epistemology, the justification for adopting this analytical method was because TA is compatible with a qualitative methodology enabling a deeper investigation of experiences, events, realities and meanings, taking into account a range of discourses. Its flexibility and theoretical freedom are some of its advantages.

Additional advantages of TA include the relative ease of the method, the accessibility of the method to novice researchers of qualitative research, the accessibility of the results to the educated general public, the ease of condensing and summarising a large body of data then subsequently providing a depth of description, highlight non-anticipated insights, similarities and differences across the set of data (Braun & Clarke, 2006).

The main weaknesses of TA lie in research that is poorly analysed or has limited interpretative value due to an ambiguous theoretical framework and research questions which are inappropriate (Braun & Clarke, 2006). Also, TA limits the researcher from making claims about the functionality of talk in contradiction to more rigorous qualitative methods such as Discource Analysis and this has sometimes resulted in TA being considered as inferior to other methods (Braun and Clarke, 2006) and at the extreme, not even considered as an analytical method (Anderson, 2007).

In addition, there are potential pitfalls of conducting thematic analysis and Braun and Clarke (2006) listed five. These included: 1) a failure to analyse the data, 2) using the interview questions as the themes instead of organically identifying themes from the data set, 3) lack of consistency and coherence between themes which do not adequately capture the majority of the data, 4) a contradiction between the data and analytic assertions, 5) a contradiction between analytic assertions and the theoretical framework.

The researcher was mindful of these and these were overcome through: 1) making analytical claims about the data as opposed to providing a string of data extracts, 2) the themes emerged

from the data as opposed to being imposed on them, 3) having adequate examples from the data extracts to support convincing and coherent themes, 4) ensuring data extracts match and are consistent with the analysis and having a trainee educational psychologist (TEP) colleague verify the construction of codes and themes.

3.4. Sample

As SM is a relatively rare condition, recruitment methods were somewhat time-consuming and consisted of the researcher calling and emailing the Special Educational Needs Coordinators (SENCos) in 324 primary and nursery schools within eight local authorities (LAs) in England and Wales. Recruitment was through school SENCos who notified the researcher of relevant teachers who were then contacted through a telephone call or email. Following verbal agreement to participate in the study, an interview time was set up with the member of staff via telephone or email. All interviews were conducted in a room at the participant's school.

The sample consisted of 20 participants who were of white British ethnic origin and 90% (N= 18) were female. Within the sample, two primary school teachers had experience of working with more than one selectively mute child during their career.

The participants were categorised into two groups; those who were working with a selectively mute child at the time of conducting the interviews and those who had previously taught a selectively mute child within the last four years. SM is a rare condition (Walters, 2002) presenting with a rate of 18 in 10,000 children (Kopp & Gillberg, 1997), and therefore the previous experience pre-dating four years was chosen in order to broaden the sample range which was reflected in the makeup of the sample consisting of nine participants who had previously taught a selectively mute child as opposed to 11 participants who were

working with a selectively mute child at the time of the study. Four participants who were working with a selectively mute child at the time of interviewing, agreed to take part in the diary study. There was a poor rate of return with two of the four participants completing the diary for the first week and no subsequent returns.

However, much memory research has suggested that memory representations are inaccurate, distorted and easily transformed (Loftus, 1977, 1979a; Loftus & Palmer, 1974). For instance, eyewitness testimony research proposed that post-incident information impaired memory for the original incident although subsequent researchers stated that the original information was inaccessible as opposed to impaired (Bekerian & Bowers, 1983; Christiaansen & Ochalek, 1983). Loftus' (1977) impairment hypothesis of memory construction criticised retrospective data due to the impact of interference and the destructive, updating nature of memory storage. Although researchers have refuted these claims (McCloskey & Zaragoza, 1985a; Zaragoza, McCloskey & Jamis, 1987) and models such as the co-existence model of memory state that memories remain intact, it is hypothesised that retrospective accounts were more susceptible to memory contamination in a way that current experience would not be. Therefore, it was hypothesised that retrospective interviews took account of participants having re-rationalised past events. A more realistic representation or real model of teachers' experiences may be gained from teachers who were currently working with a selectively mute child. This enabled the researcher to capture the dynamic nature of teachers' experiences during the interaction between different constructions and interpretations.

The inclusion criteria were:

- Primary and nursery teachers. The stress and pressures of teaching children within a primary school have been demonstrated as qualitatively and quantitatively different to teaching children in secondary schools (e.g., Wheldall & Merrett, 1988). Also, Cline

and Baldwin (1998) state that the peak time for referral is at school entry age and recruiting teachers from the nursery and primary sectors was likely to yield more participants.

- Teachers who had taught, or were teaching a selectively mute child on a full-time basis and who were the child's main teacher.
- Teachers who previously taught a selectively mute child, did so for at least two and a half terms.
- Teachers had taught the child in a mainstream school.
- Teachers who had current or previous experience of working with a selectively mute child within the last four years.

The exclusion criteria were:

- Secondary school teachers. The justification for this was that secondary teachers would have less contact with a selectively mute child or young person and therefore would have a very different experience to a teacher who worked with the child on a full-time basis. Their experiences would be likely to be qualitatively and quantitatively different in relation to emotions such as emotional arousal and the development of attachments.
- Teachers who taught a selectively mute child in a special needs school, specialist resource base or pupil referral unit.

3.5. Instruments

The instruments consisted of an interview schedule (Appendix B) to guide the interview, a

diary schedule (Appendix C), an Olympus Dictaphone to record the interview and the researcher who served as a data collection instrument. The advantages of using the Dictaphone was that it was small and unobtrusive which increased the naturalness of the interview as it could have been very distracting if the researcher made notes during the interview, and the Dictaphone had a very high sound quality which increased the reliability of the data for transcription.

3.5.1. Interview schedule.

The interview schedule consisted of 21 questions all of which were open ended as these structured the subject of the question but did not limit participants in the content or manner of their answers and thus offered response flexibility. There were a number of other advantages of using open-ended questions: they enabled the researcher to probe for a greater depth of information; they enabled the researcher to clarify ambiguities; they enabled the researcher to explore the boundaries of the participant's knowledge; and they promoted rapport building. Some questions were designed to 'funnel' information from a broad question narrowing down to more specific ones such as question number eight, "Did the selectively mute child have any siblings? If yes, can you describe their patterns of communication? Can you tell me your interpretation of these patterns of communication?"

Direct or specific questions were created for answering demographic and factual questions and were avoided for questions relating to feelings, thoughts and behaviours as these may have caused participants to be alarmed and therefore produce more guarded and cautious responses. Demographic and background questions were kept to a minimum and placed at the beginning of the schedule in order to maintain interviewee motivation as recommended by Patton (1990) and to put participants at their ease due to their non-threatening and non-

controversial content. The remainder of the schedule consisted of indirect questions designed to answer the research questions investigating what it was like to be a teacher of a selectively mute child. Tuckman (1972) stated that this would facilitate more honest and open responses when the purposes of questions are less obvious. Also, there were no leading questions to avoid leading the participants to answer differently or the researcher making inaccurate assumptions about the participants' experiences.

In addition, some questions required participants to specify and provide an example. Question 10 was a Critical Incident (CI) question which required participants to reflect on their emotions and recall a time or incident when they felt that particular emotion most intensely. An incident was defined as an adequately complete and observable human activity which would warrant inferences and predictions to be made regarding the perpetrator of the activity (Flanagan, 1954). Criteria for the incident being critical were that in the observer's view, there was lucidity in the purpose of the incident and certainty with regard to the effects of the incident (Flanagan, 1954). The aims of the Critical Incident Technique (CIT) are to enable the collection of observations of human behaviour to assist in practical problem solving and the development of broad psychological principles (Flanagan, 1954).

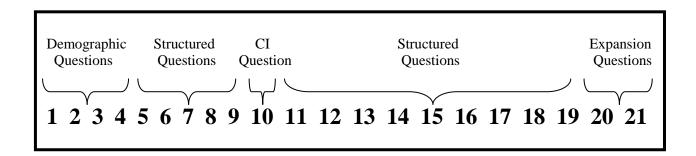


Figure 3. Representation of the interview schedule

The themes emerged from the data and were not imposed on it. Rather, the data were post-coded: codes were ascribed in response to the data collected. Within the area of prompt

questions associated with thoughts, feelings and behaviours, the three major themes emerged but the exact thoughts, feelings and behaviours were not pre-supposed. Therefore, the questions were designed to deliberately introduce prompts in order to elicit data from the participants but the themes that emerged were not pre-supposed. This is a reflection of the view that thoughts, feelings and behaviours are universal aspects of human experience.

The response modes were unstructured in order to provide participants with the freedom to give their answers in full and therefore, the analysis required coding the data through Thematic Analysis.

3.5.2. Diary schedule.

The questions within the diary schedule were open-ended because of the advantages offered by this questioning style. Figure 4 is a graphical representation of the diary schedule.

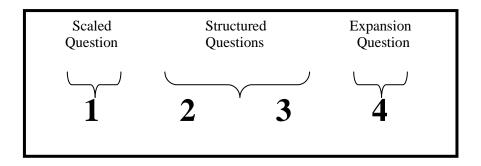


Figure 4. Representation of the diary schedule

Question 1 was designed as a rating scale; it required participants to describe their feelings or emotions within the last fortnight and was scaled with 0 being the least intense and 10 being the most intense. This scale was used in order to increase the ease with which changes in feelings or emotions could be tracked.

3.5.3. Validity of the instruments.

The research aimed to address validity through having a sample size (N= 20) sufficient enough to provide rich data from teachers including participants working in England and Wales. Also, the questions within the interview schedule were designed to provide depth and richness of data which was a recommendation by Cohen, Manion and Morrison (2000) when addressing validity in qualitative research.

Maxwell (1992) argued that qualitative methods should consist of five kinds of validity: descriptive; interpretative; theoretical; and evaluative. How the present research meets these validity criteria, is described in the following sub-sections.

3.5.3.1. Descriptive validity.

This denotes the factual accuracy of the accounts and this was met through the researcher recording the interviews by Dictaphone and transcribing them verbatim as recommended by Braun and Clarke (2006). Therefore, the transcriptions contained no omissions, summaries or researcher inferences.

3.5.3.2. Interpretative validity.

This describes the ability of the research to capture the participant's subjective interpretations and meanings and was achieved through the transcriptions remaining loyal to the interview context. For instance, the transcriptions included repetitions in speech, interruptions and through the researcher frequently reflecting back statements to the participants in order to clarify meaning.

3.5.3.3. Theoretical & construct validity.

Theoretical validity relates to the extent that the research explains phenomena or the participant's constructs. This was achieved through ensuring that an appropriate analytic method was used, namely that of Thematic Analysis.

3.5.3.4. Evaluative validity.

Evaluative validity relates to applying an evaluative framework to the research as opposed to mere explanation. This is a potential pitfall of research that Braun and Clarke (2006) also warn of. They argue that weak research merely describes through a string of extracts as opposed to analysing the data. Therefore, the present research utilised a step-by-step guide (Braun & Clarke, 2006) to ensure fidelity to the analytical and evaluative process relating the data to previous theory and research.

3.5.3.5. Internal validity.

It is argued that the current research has a high level of internal validity within Hammersley's (1992) criteria due to the credibility of the data, the convincingness of the data enabling greater claims to be made and the clarity of the claims made by the data which are descriptive, explanatory and theory generative. Additionally, Cohen, Manion and Morrison (2000) describe further validity criteria to increase the quality of ethnographic research such as peer examination of data which was applied during the coding process of data analysis. Also, within their checklist, it may be argued that the present research meets the following criteria representing a high level of internal validity:

1. High level of confidence in the data.

- 2. High authenticity of the data as the transcriptions reflected the context and narrative style of the interview process. Cassell (1988) warned that data may be distorted as an implication of the asymmetrical power relations within the interview situation. Therefore, the interviewer informed participants at the beginning of the interview that they were also a qualified teacher. This was done in order to re-align the status position of the interviewer and interviewee to make the dual statuses more equal and to promote a dialogue between equals. This approach assisted rapport building. The researcher had similar experiences in which they taught a selectively mute child. This experience, it is argued, enabled the researcher to be a more sensitive interviewer due to their insight, experience and knowledge of the topic.
- 3. A sound research design.

A component part of internal validity is authenticity. It is argued that the research has a high level of authenticity through the following criteria set by Cohen, Manion and Morrison (2000):

- 1. Fairness by providing a balanced representation of the multiple experiences for those working with selectively mute children. For instance, the results show both positive experiences such as participants reporting that they found the experience rewarding and negative accounts of experiences such as participants reporting feeling frustrated and worried.
- Ontological authenticity as the research provides a more advanced understanding of the impact of working with selectively mute children for nursery and primary teachers.

3. *Educative authenticity* through generating a new and greater awareness of the range of thoughts, feelings and behaviours experienced by nursery and primary teachers who have worked with selectively mute children.

3.5.4. Reliability of the instruments.

The researcher ensured inter-rater reliability as recommended by Denzin and Lincoln (1994) through having a TEP colleague check the first two interview transcripts to ensure coding or inter- rater reliability. The outcome of the comparisons was to refine some of the codes created and review the research questions. The research question, 'Do teachers experience stress when teaching a selectively mute child?' was omitted and the research question 'What is it like to be a teacher of a selectively mute child?' was subdivided into three sub-sections focusing on thoughts, feelings and behaviours. The questions, 'What mediating factors influence the kinds of experiences teachers have?' and 'Is the experience a developmental process over time?' were re-ordered so the former question preceded the latter.

Cohen, Manion and Morrison (2000) argued that a way to control for reliability is by conducting a highly structured interview. Therefore, interviews followed an interview schedule in which all participants were asked the same questions, in the same format and any additional questions which were asked spontaneously, served as prompts for the purpose of clarification and enabled participants to expand on their answers. This is in line with Kvale's (1996) criteria for an effective interviewer, which includes interpretation through clarifying the interviewee's statements.

Silverman (1993) argued that each question should be understood in the same way by the interviewees. Therefore, to ensure that the language was accessible for participants, the interview schedule was piloted on three participants as recommended by Silverman (1993).

3.6. Procedure

Participants were required to reflect on their experiences during a semi-structured interview consisting of between 30 and 45 minutes. The researcher used interview prompt questions within a schedule (Appendix B) to guide the interview. The procedure is described in detail below under discreet stages including recruitment of participants, data collection and analysis.

3.6.1. Recruitment.

The researcher downloaded school lists within eight LAs and worked through a
hierarchical recruitment process (see figure 5) within England and Wales. These were
chosen based on physical proximity to where the researcher was based near the
university city and the placement where the participant had relocated for the year of
their training.

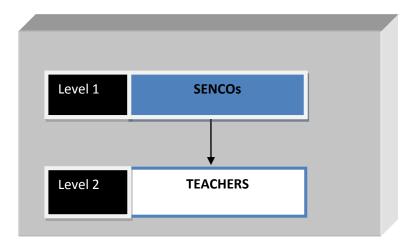


Figure 5. Flow chart of the hierarchical recruitment process

- 2. The researcher called SENCos of nursery, infant, junior and primary schools in eight LAs. The researcher enquired whether there were currently, or had recently been any selectively mute children in the school within the last four years. If this was confirmed, the researcher requested permission to contact the teacher(s) who taught the child(ren). If the researcher was directed to contact the SENCo via email, then the format in Appendix C was used. If the researcher was directed to contact the teacher via email then the format in Appendix D was used. A letter was drafted in anticipation if SENCos requested to be contacted by post (Appendix E). However, there were no such requests. In total, 324 Schools were contacted.
- 3. When the researcher received verbal consent from the SENCo then the relevant teacher was contacted through telephone or email in order to schedule an interview.
- 4. A confirmation email was sent to the teacher once the interview date and time were confirmed.

3.6.2. Data collection.

- 5. Each interview was held in a quiet room in the school where the teacher was located within a two week data collection period in February 2011. This was done in order to increase the likelihood of the teacher agreeing to participate in the research and thus increase the response rate, and also to ensure the interview was conducted in an appropriate and non-threatening environment for both the researcher and teacher. The researcher explained the purpose and nature of the research and the participant was asked to sign the consent form (Appendix F) agreeing to be interviewed.
- 6. The participant was asked to give verbal consent for the interview to be recorded by Dictaphone. It was explained that the participant would have a two week period in

- which to contact the researcher should they wish to withdraw their data from the research.
- 7. The participant provided a verbal account of their experiences during the semistructured interview. Each participant was asked the same prompt questions and each interview lasted between 30 and 45 minutes.
- 8. On terminating the interview, the participant was debriefed about the aims of the study (Appendix G).
- 9. Teachers who were working with a selectively mute child at the time of interviewing, were also asked if they would consent to take part in the diary study. This involved the researcher emailing a template (Appendix H) to participants once a fortnight in order to track the participant's thoughts, feelings and behaviours over time until the last week of the summer term. Participants were required to complete and email the diary schedule to the researcher. The safety of the data was ensured as participants were provided with the researcher's work email address which was password protected to ensure that no third parties would be able to access the information. This would consist of 11 diary entries in total when participants returned the completed templates.

3.6.3. Analysis

10. The data were organised using Nvivo 9 Analysis Software Package. The audio recording was transferred from the Dictaphone to a password protected file on the researcher's computer and then deleted. The audio data were transcribed and subsequently deleted between April and July 2011 when all transcriptions were completed. All the data were transcribed by the researcher using Express Scribe

- Transcription Software. Written data were stored in a password protected document. It was confidential to the researcher and anonymous to readers.
- 11. The data were analysed using Thematic Analysis following the guidelines set out by Braun and Clarke (2006) in order to ensure a theoretically and methodologically rigorous analysis. These included six distinct phases although it was not a linear process as some phases required revisiting.
- 12. Phase 1: Familiarisation with the data. This consisted of the researcher becoming familiar with the data and began during data collection followed by early engagement with the data during transcription in order to increase perceptiveness of the more subtle elements of the data (Tuckett, 2005). Reissman (1993) states that transcription is an excellent way to become familiar with the data despite the lengthy time commitments.
- 13. Phase 2: Generating initial codes. The data were initially coded based on salient features in the data. Cohen, Manion and Morrison (2000) describe coding as the process of assigning a category label to a datum. A code refers to, "the most basic segment, or element, of the raw data to information that can be assessed in a meaningful way regarding the phenomenon" (Boyatzis, 1998, p. 68). This phase was characterised by the *organisation* of data into meaningful groups and therefore was a process of creating categories. The definition of a code was made explicit in the researcher's own mind and to the TEP to ensure that the codes were applied in the same way each time they were used. Codes were created abundantly to include as many patterns as possible which had generous inclusivity of the surrounding data and unexpected codes that departed from the main story in the analysis were included.
- 14. *Phase 3: Searching for themes.* This phase was characterised by *interpretation* of the data and included the sorting of codes into themes. Attempts were made to name

- themes based on the actual words of participants as recommended by Anderson (2007). At this phase, a thematic map was created for each research question consisting of five thematic maps in total through the MindManager 2012 software application.
- 15. Phase 4: Reviewing themes. This phase was characterised by the refinement of the themes and review of the thematic maps through re-reading again the entire data set. This was done in order to verify the validity of individual themes and to check if any codes had been missed or needed recoding. Once the researcher was satisfied that the thematic map accurately fitted the data, then the analysis continued to the fifth phase.
- 16. *Phase 5: Defining and naming themes*. During this phase, themes were defined and sub-themes created which have been described as, "themes-within-a-theme" (Braun & Clarke, 2006, p. 92). Sub-themes had the advantage of providing a structure to large themes and for representing the hierarchical structure of meaning within the data. The names of themes were chosen for clarity and conciseness.
- 17. Phase 6: Producing the report. This involved constructing an extended written account of the data (presented in the results section of the thesis) which aims to be adequately analytical in relation to the research questions. To assist in the process of report writing and identifying the questions to ask of the data as well as analytic claims to be made from it, the researcher referred to the work of Toerien and Wilkinson (2004) as recommended by Braun and Clarke (2006).
- 18. The six phases were completed for interview transcripts one and two.
- 19. Interview transcripts one and two were emailed to a TEP colleague who coded them and identified salient themes. Following joint review and feedback, some themes were combined or merged, several new themes were created, some themes were split into

different parts and some themes were relocated to different coding groups. The research questions were also reviewed and amended.

- 20. Interview transcripts one and two were amended in response to the feedback from the TEP.
- 21. The remainder of the interview transcripts were analysed using the six phases of TA.

3.7. Ethical Issues

3.7.1. Consent.

Prior to data collection, verbal consent was sought from the SENCos. Participants were asked to complete a consent form (Appendix F) before the interview began which also provided details of the study. They were informed of the purpose of the study, their right to withdraw and that the data would be stored anonymously. At the end of the interview, participants were debriefed verbally and in writing (Appendix G).

3.7.2. Anonymity & confidentiality.

The data were stored anonymously in a password protected document and confidentiality was maintained by the researcher refraining from disclosing children's first names that were sometimes revealed during the interview. It was intended that the audio files would be deleted 2 weeks later but due to time commitments, these were deleted from April to July 2011 following the completion of the transcription phase which was lengthier than originally anticipated in the research proposal. The data however, remained confidential to the researcher who did not disclose the information to third parties.

3.7.3. Participant welfare.

Consideration was given to the potential consequences of conducting the interviews, such as eliciting distressing or stressful memories. As Cleave (2009) stated, "EPs need to be aware of the possible heightened emotions regarding the selectively mute child in school" (p. 245). The researcher overcame this by explaining to the participant before the interview, that they had the right to terminate the interview at any point without question. Therefore the nonmaleficence ethical criteria was met by ensuring that the interview did not harm the participant. The interviewer also utilised a person-centred approach applying Rogerian principles (Rogers, 1951) such as unconditional positive regard. Although the intention was to gather data rather than to effect therapeutic change, it was viewed that adopting this position would facilitate the information sharing process. As Cohen, Manion and Morrison (2000) state, "human interaction is central to the production of knowledge" (p. 267) and the interview process is an interpersonal encounter. The researcher also utilised strategies to maintain participant motivation by using non-verbal cues such as nodding and making encouraging noises. Kvale (1996) cites sensitivity such as empathic, active listening as a qualification for an effective interviewer in addition to being knowledgeable, gentle and open.

3.7.4. Researcher welfare.

There were ethical issues surrounding the safety of the researcher regarding flexibility of conducting the interviews at various locations according to the teachers' convenience. The risks were minimised by conducting all interviews in school locations when there were other members of staff in the building and by having a TEP who the researcher would report to once the interview was completed. The protocol for the researcher was to send an email to the

TEP two days before the interview informing them of details regarding the interview (Appendix I) including the beginning and anticipated end time of the interview and the location. Following termination of the interview, the researcher contacted the TEP via a phone call or text message no later than an hour after the anticipated end time of the interview. Following receipt of contact from the researcher, the TEP then logged a safe conclusion. It was agreed that if there was a failure for the researcher to contact the TEP after an hour of the anticipated end time of the interview, the protocol for the TEP was as follows:

- 1. To call the researcher on their mobile phone. If this attempt at contact was unsuccessful to proceed to the second point.
- 2. To call the school in which the interview was being held. If this attempt at contact was unsuccessful to proceed to the third point.
- 3. To call the last known location of the researcher and enquire about their whereabouts.

However, the researcher informed the TEP within an hour of the termination of each interview and therefore, during the data collection phase, the TEP did not have to proceed beyond the first point.

3.8. Design

A semi-structured interview method was used to explore teachers' experiences of working with selectively mute children. The course of the interview, topics and issues were predetermined with flexibility for expansion of questions. Lincoln and Guba (1985) argued that providing a structure was useful when the researcher was aware of their gaps in knowledge. The interview was provided with a structure through the creation of an interview schedule as the researcher had some topical knowledge based on previous literature (Buck, 1987; Cline &

Baldwin, 1998; Edmondson, 1986) and was therefore in a position to frame questions that provided some of the knowledge required. However, as previously stated, there remain gaps in the literature and therefore the researcher conducted semi-structured interviews in order to expand on the current knowledge in the field. It may be stated that the researcher's knowledge was incomplete and therefore centrally positioned within Morrison's (1993) interview continuum as depicted in figure 6.

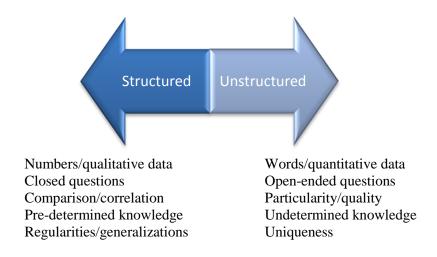


Figure 6. Representation of Morrison's (1993) five continua for conceptualising interviews

It has been stated that, "Learning through language is central to the school curriculum" (Cleave, 2009, p. 235). Yet, it may also be argued that teaching through language is central to the school curriculum, and using a semi-structured interview technique was an essential method to explore the impact on teachers when there is a breakdown in this form of communication. The transcription of the interview conversations enabled the cataloguing of patterns of teachers' experiences. Therefore the interview method was chosen because it was better suited for the purpose of the research; principally for collecting information that had direct relevance to the research objectives and questions while providing greater depth and breadth. Tuckman (1972) argued that offering an inside view into a person's head would enable the measurement of a person's knowledge, their preferences and their beliefs. It was a

more advantageous method than a questionnaire method due to the interactive nature of obtaining relevant and focused information due to opportunities to probe the interviewees and ask questions. Also, the interview method would naturally yield a greater magnitude of data that, it was believed, would be more insightful. Although the number of respondents that could be reached was limited, once verbal consent was obtained to take part in the interview, the rate of return was excellent as only one participant of the 21 scheduled to participate in the research did not attend on the day of the interview.

Also, a strength of the design was in conducting face-to-face interviews. Although this was more time consuming and costly than telephone interviews which do not require extensive travel arrangements, this data collection method was advantageous for enabling the researcher to attend to non-verbal cues during the study. This was highly effective in indicating whether participants understood the research questions or not and by enabling non-verbal cues to mediate the dialogue, which is a phenomenon highlighted by Miller and Cannell (1997). It enabled the researcher to attend to and interpret how information was said in addition to its meaning. The interview is a social situation (Cohen, Manion & Morrison, 2000) and therefore it can be argued that conducting the interviews in dynamic, social conditions increased the reliability and validity of the data.

On the other hand, Miller and Cannell (1997) also argue that telephone interviews may strengthen the reliability of data by increasing the likelihood that interviewees disclose information which they may be more inhibited to do in a more intimate, face-to-face setting. Yet, the findings showed that participants were prepared to disclose personal information, some of which, at times, represented them in a less favourable light such as admitting frustrations and annoyances. Finally, a diary method was chosen as it was compatible with the longitudinal nature of the third research question relating to the development of thoughts, feelings and behaviours. However, this resulted in a 100% drop-out rate which is further

discussed in the results section.

3.9. Chapter Summary

The current chapter has provided a justification for the research paradigm and described the methodology consisting of semi-structured interviews. These were conducted in light of the British Psychological Society's (BPS's, 2006) ethical guidelines and Code of Conduct and Cardiff University's School of Psychology Ethics Committee's scrutiny. The data collection instruments and procedures were described in detail to increase replicability; this and the design are critiqued in Chapter 5. Chapter 4 now presents the findings.

4. Results

4.1. Chapter Overview

Chapter 3 provided a justification for the research paradigm utilised to answer the research questions. It described the sample, instruments and research design including consideration of the ethical issues presented by the research. The analysis of the findings was then outlined. This chapter summarises the method utilised to analyse the data and the key findings organised in relation to the overarching themes and sub-themes within the five research questions. Chapter 5 discusses the theoretical and methodological implications of the results.

4.2. The Sample

20 participants were recruited and interviewed regarding their experiences of working with a selectively mute child. The full list of participant demographics is illustrated in Table 2 on the following page and a list of the pupil demographics can be found in Appendix K.

Table 2. Participant demographics

Part. No.	Gender (M/F)*	Profession (NT/ PT)**	Qualifications ***	Duration of teaching experience (years)	Duration of contact with child (terms)	Recency of experience	Involvement of Outside Agencies****
1	F	PT	Unknown	15	3	2009-2010	FSW, EP, AC
2	F	PT	GTP	1	2.5	2006-2007	SALT, SS
3	F	NT	Dip. (NNEB), GNVQ (Health & Social Care)	11	2.5	2010-2011	SALT, EP
4	F	PT	BEd	8	3	2007-2008	SALT, BSO, PT
5	F	PT	NNEB, BEd	12	3	2007-2008	BSO
6	F	PT	BA (Primary)	2	3	2009-2010	EP
7	F	PT	GTP	5	2.5	Current	None
8	F	NT	Dip. (Pre-school Practice)	15	3	2008-2009	TC
9	F	PT	PGCE	Unknown	2.5	Current	SALT, EP, SLT, EWDW
10	F	PT	BEd	15	2.5	Current	None
11	M	PT	GTP	2.5 terms	2.5	Current	EAL teacher, SALT
12	F	PT	PGCE	3	2.5	Current	None
13	F	PT	PGCE	6	2.5	Current	None
14	F	PT	PGCE	2	2.5	Current	SALT, EP
15	F	PT	BEd	18	2.5	Current	BSO, EP, DN
16	F	PT	BEd	11	3 5	2009-2010	EP
17	F	PT	PGCE, MSc (Special Education)	10	5	Current	SN
18	F	PT	BEd	3	3	2008-2009	SALT, SN, EP
19	F	PT	PGCE	11	2.5	Current	SALT
_20	F	PT	PGCE	7	2.5	Current	None

^{*} M= Male, F= Female

^{**} NT= Nursery Teacher, PT= Primary Teacher

^{***} GTP= Graduate Teacher Programme, NNEB= National Nursery Examination Board, GNVQ= General National Vocational Qualification, BEd= Bachelor of Education, Dip.= Diploma, BA= Bachelor of Arts, PGCE= Postgraduate Certificate in Education, MSc= Master of Science

^{****} FSW= Family Support Worker, EP= Educational Psychologist, AC= Anxiety Clinic, SS= Social Services, SALT= Speech and Language Therapist, BSO= Behaviour Support Officer, TC= Teacher Counsellor, PT= Play Therapist, SLT= Specialist Literacy Teacher, EWDW= Emotional Welfare Development Worker, EAL= English as an Additional Language, SN= School Nurse, DN= Diabetic Nurse

4.3. Organisation of Data

All the data were transcribed by the researcher to increase the reliability of the coding process and to increase familiarity with the data. An example of an interview transcript is provided in Appendix J. For the diary study, four of the eleven participants who were working with a selectively mute child at the time of interviewing, agreed to take part in the diary study. All participants completed the first week of the fortnightly diaries but all participants dropped out of the study after the first week. Therefore, the data are presented with regard to the 20 interviews conducted.

1068 initial codes were generated from across the entire data set and coded through identifying potential repeated patterns and similarity of concepts (Appendix N). These were reviewed and 697 codes were identified following the amalgamation and deletion of certain codes (Appendices M-O). 33 themes were identified and numerous sub-themes. Appendix P illustrates the name and content of each theme.

Within each theme, quotations were selected from the interview transcripts to illustrate each of the themes and in order to answer the research questions. The themes and sub-themes were then related to each of the study's research questions.

4.4. Question 1: How Does Working with a Selectively Mute Child Impact on a Teacher's Thoughts?

Ten themes were identified to answer question one. These are visually depicted in the thematic map (Figure 7) below which also includes the sub-themes.

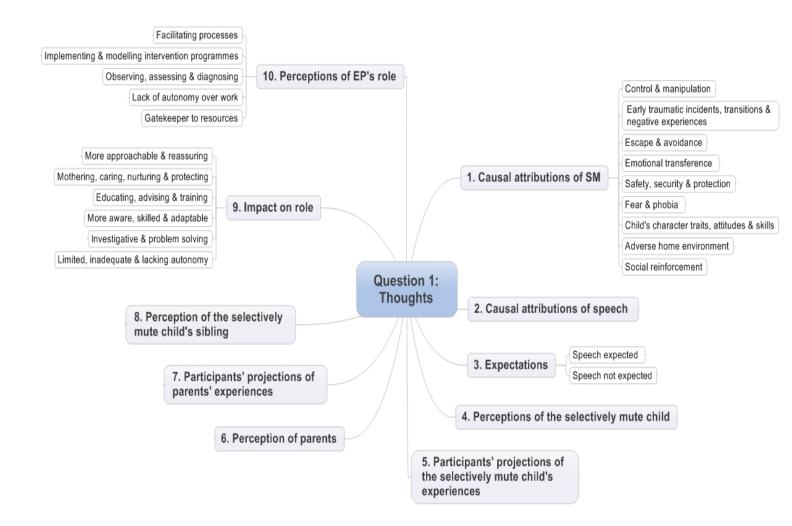


Figure 7. Thematic map illustrating the themes and sub-themes identified in relation to teachers' thoughts.

4.4.1. Theme 1. Causal attributions of SM.

Participants provided a range of explanations regarding the causes and explanations for the

child's mutism and these are described within nine sub-themes.

4.4.1.1. Control & manipulation.

An internal factor to explain the child's mute behaviour was in order to establish control and to manipulate others (N= 9). In one case, this was recognised only after engaging in the interview process.

- "I overheard him saying to his friend "you don't have to talk to her if you don't want to". And I said "yes you do, we're not having any of that. I ask a question, you will answer me...I did then think, he's been stringing us along. It's been on purpose. Do you know what, I'd really forgotten about that. Right at the end of the summer term and I thought the little toad." (Participant 5)
- "Perhaps that's why he done it, because he liked the feeling of people trying to get him to talk. He felt he was getting one over on, I really don't know." (Participant 8)

4.4.1.2. Early traumatic incidents, transitions & negative experiences.

Some participants (N= 9) believed that the child experiencing a past unknown trauma such as beginning school, a stressful transition and parental marital breakdown may have caused the SM.

• "I contacted his school who said that he did talk but was very, very quiet but did speak to the teacher there so I think he already had social difficulties, difficulties at home but the traumatic day of coming into the class led the rest of the time that he was with us for that period although he did get better." (Participant 17)

• "Coming from Nepal into a situation that was very different. From the age of six or seven children become less egotistical, they start noticing the world around them. At a sort of pivotal time in her growing up, she's been exposed to massive change. I think she just went into shut down." (Participant 2)

4.4.1.3. Escape & avoidance.

Children's mute behaviour was also described as a form of escape from situations or relationship building and to avoid embarrassment and disappointing others (N= 12).

- "I think it's just to shut himself off and to say I'm not really here. I don't need to participate." (Participant 7)
- "I believe that she's just really overly doesn't want to let people down, having got to know her. I think she feels shy and aware around adults and I think she's worried about their responses." (Participant 14)

4.4.1.4. Emotional transference.

Two participants believed that their emotional reaction and that of the child's parents exacerbated the situation.

- "Had I stressed less maybe she would have picked up on my confidence and not been stressed herself." (Participant 2)
- "So mum is a little bit anxious too so I think there may be some link with parents being anxious. Dad said he didn't speak very much in school himself. He raised that

when we were talking about the referral that as well. So it's two anxious parents."

(Participant 19)

4.4.1.5. Safety, security & protection.

Other reasons for the child's mutism were that the mutism served to protect the child and enable them to feel safe and secure (N=8).

- "I don't know some kind of protection for her? I don't know, protecting her from getting the answer wrong or keeping her safe when communicating with other children." (Participant 13)
- "There is security in the patterns of what she's doing every day, but I don't think she's changed very much in the way she is responding." (Participant I)

4.4.1.6. Fear & phobia.

Five participants described the child being afraid of speaking and in the extreme being like a phobia.

- "It was an anxiety, the more he thought about it, the harder it became for him, almost like a phobia." (Participant 17)
- "She was absolutely petrified of any adult although everyone in the school, although everyone was really friendly and open, so any new child that comes in generally goes up to an adult and hugs them because they see the other children do it." (Participant 2)

4.4.1.7. Child's character traits, attitudes & skills.

15 participants also had within-child explanations for the mute behaviour such as being a personality trait of the child. For instance, being excessively shy, withdrawn or lacking in self-confidence and self-esteem, and that once they had established the behaviour patterns, they lacked the skills to change.

- "Then when it came down to school the issue of what is possibly a self-confidence issue. Low self-esteem, lack of social skills that's why and there is an element of all of that I've noticed." (Participant 10)
- "He wasn't talking, he wouldn't answer the register or talk to anybody and he would get extremely anxious if you asked him a question so I asked his parents if they noticed this and they said that he wouldn't speak to anybody outside of the home, he'd always been like it." (Participant 17)

4.4.1.8. Adverse home environment.

Some participants (N= 3) explained the mute behaviour as a result of an adverse home environment which impacted on the child in school. Participant four recounted the change in the selectively mute child's behaviour and their siblings.

- "You could tell when something had happened at home. All of the children would become more limited in their speech." (Participant 4)
- "I just did have massive concerns about her home life and what was going on out of school because I couldn't see any reason for her behaviour within school."

 (Participant 2)

4.4.1.9. Social reinforcement.

Participants' explanations (N= 9) included the influence of others positively and negatively reinforcing the child's mute behaviour.

- "I noticed that his sisters would say "hello xxx how you?" They knew he wouldn't respond so they'd say "you look happy today". So I think sometimes he may have held back with his talking because they spoke for him but they didn't realise they were doing it." (Participant 1)
- "I think it goes back to the fact that he at some point in his life has perhaps witnessed something pretty grim and may have been rewarded for not speaking to someone about that particular event and therefore his default position instead of talking about it, instead his default position has been not to talk to someone about it." (Participant 7)

4.4.2. Theme 2. Causal attributions of speech.

There were cases of selectively mute children beginning to speak during the duration of the participant's work with the child. Participants' explanations about why the selectively mute children began speaking centred around the quality of the relationship with the recipient of speech and establishing trust with the child (N= 3).

• "What tends to happen, it seems to me that it's related to the relationship with the adult. She's talked much more towards the end of the year than the beginning of the year and she does talk in front of some adults but she won't talk to adults if you know what I mean." (Participant 14)

Other explanations by two participants included attributing the child speaking as due to their own successful involvement and efforts.

• "I found it a challenge and obviously I said earlier about the sense of satisfaction when he did start talking. You feel proud that you made that breakthrough."

(Participant 3)

4.4.3. Theme 3. Expectations.

Two sub-themes emerged from participants' expectations including the expectation of speech and the acceptance of mutism.

4.4.3.1. Speech expected.

Some participants (N= 5) thought the child would speak by the end of their time working with the selectively mute child and this influenced their teaching style by being more insistent on the child communicating verbally.

- "When he first came in, I thought we'll have him talking by the first half term."

 (Participant 5)
- "You're not being rude because you smile with your voice when you're saying it but admit being very direct "I want you to do this now", no choice in it whatsoever."

 (Participant 2)

4.4.3.2. Speech not expected.

Half of the participants (N= 10) expected the mute behaviour to remain constant throughout

the year and this impacted on their behaviour by not pressuring or insisting for the child to speak.

• "He certainly wasn't going to speak to me so I knew that, I didn't set myself up, the expectation of him talking to me and I didn't put that pressure onto him so then he could keep the control but we'd find a way." (Participant 4)

These expectations were sometimes set by outside professionals.

• "...the most important thing that they [SALT, Play Therapist] told me was "don't want him to speak to you, don't expect it, don't think that you're going to be the person that he's actually going to speak to" and that was enough." (Participant 4)

4.4.4. Theme 4. Perceptions of the selectively mute child.

Half of the descriptions relating to the selectively mute child were extremely positive such as having a good sense of humour, being clever, polite, patient and nice. Participants often viewed the mute behaviour as not being the child's fault and that in fact the child was not troublesome because they were so quiet and could be easily overlooked.

- "Other adults around the school, she was never challenging, she was such a good girl, she was very well behaved but it would be that startled rabbit look in her face if somebody asked her a question or she didn't know the answer or she wasn't quite sure about it." (Participant 1)
- "She never causes trouble but she'll just there not doing a lot." (Participant 9)
- "He's got a nice sense of humour." (Participant 15)

4.4.5. Theme 5. Participants' projections of the selectively mute child's experiences.

Four participants perceived that the selectively mute child was experiencing worry and frustration and many of the feelings they perceived the child experiencing, reflected their own feelings.

- "I think there are times when she's very frustrated by it when she needs something."

 (Participant 14)
- "I think he felt he had a lot of spotlight on him then as well which any child does but everyone's waiting to see are you going to talk today and it was just getting more pressure." (Participant 3)

4.4.6. Theme 6. Perception of parents.

Five participants' views of the selectively mute child's parents ranged from positive, especially when parents had worked well with the teacher, to more negative perceptions.

- "Mum ...comes over as quite aggressive the way she speaks to you." (Participant 5)
- "Her mum was very good, she'd come in because she had an IEP and not because of these problems it was more of an academic thing and so mum was very good at coming in to talk to us." (Participant 1)

4.4.7. Theme 7. Participants' projections of parents' experiences.

Half of the participants described parents as experiencing a range of emotions such as relief

and pleasure with the child's progress but also as being frustrated about gaining or avoiding their child being labelled and anxious about being judged on their parenting skills.

- "Mum had various feedback, I think she took it as a criticism." (Participant 2)
- "Some parents because they have to be consulted, they have to be interviewed and things, they consider it often a failing on their behalf." (Participant 1)

4.4.8. Theme 8. Perception of selectively mute child's sibling.

Half of the participants reported having had contact with the selectively mute child's sibling(s) and eight participants reported having worked with the selectively mute child's sibling.

- "An almost identical pattern but his brother started speaking out loud when he was at the end of Reception so when he was about 5 but xxx it was about 6 or 7 weeks ago that he started speaking out loud in front of lots of people." (Participant 20)
- "And they're very similar in their academic ability but her sister has a lot more to get out of her, she will talk a lot more. It's easier to get stuff out of her." (Participant 9)

4.4.9. Theme 9. Impact on role.

Participants viewed themselves as having multiple roles or "wearing many hats" as described by participant two. The impact on their role as a result of their experiences working with the selectively mute children, are listed in the following six sub-sections.

4.4.9.1. More approachable & reassuring.

Four participants viewed their roles had changed to be more approachable, supportive and reassuring to parents.

- "I think that reassurance helped and in fact the headmaster has said I'm an asset to the school. I'm not being big headed or anything because I feel really embarrassed but he says it's quite interesting the parents will come to you and they might not even go to him so there might be a parent whose son is in Year 4 and I don't even work with that child but they're willing to come to me because they feel more comfortable." (Participant 3)
- "I suppose I've had to become more patient with her." (Participant 12)

4.4.9.2. Mothering, caring, nurturing & protecting.

Role adaptations also included five participants describing that they adopted a more nurturing and protective role.

- "You feel like a carer, you do feel like a mother. I see more of these children than I do my own children on a whole week to week basis and you do feel really protective of them and you really do want the best for them to push them to their full capabilities and you do want to find out what they are interested." (Participant 2)
- "I suppose it's nurturing but then that's our job as teachers isn't it, to nurture? As much as she had a need that was different to the other children, all children have needs and our job is to nurture them and care about them because if we didn't I don't think they would really grow, would they?" (Participant 19)

4.4.9.3. Educating, advising & training.

Some participants (N= 7) viewed their role as educating and training others including educating and advising parents and colleagues both informally and formally such as setting up a training course in school.

- "Researcher: Did working with a selectively mute child impact on your role identity?

 Your identity as a teacher?
 - Participant 20: I think possibly in making other people aware of it. You want everybody to understand this." (Participant 20)
- "I've set up a training course for Teaching Assistants within the school."

 (Participant 17)
- "I know teachers who had taught her previously now have come to ask me and we liaise on how we dealt with it so there's that sort of approach." (Participant 18)

4.4.9.4. More aware, skilled & adaptable.

When reflecting on their experiences, eight participants stated that their skill set had grown and they had improved in their professional roles.

- "I suppose it makes you more flexible. You're always trying to think for that activity, how can it work for him?" (Participant 15)
- "I think it's made me realise that a lot of what we do depends on verbal communication. Things like, I take the register completely differently now so it's things like thumbs up if you're having a good day, thumbs down if you're not. A really good way of seeing how people are feeling. I suppose I pay more attention to their non-verbal communication now as well as verbal." (Participant 14)

4.4.9.5. Investigative & problem solving.

Three participants viewed their role as being to "fix the problem" and felt disappointment and frustration when this did not always materialise.

- "To start off with it is quite frustrating, you want to be the one that solves the problem." (Participant 19)
- "I felt like I wanted to find out what the problem was and solve it all in one year but obviously you can't do that." (Participant 6)

4.4.9.6. Limited, inadequate & lacking autonomy.

Five participants were highly aware of their limited skill set in dealing effectively with the selectively mute child and perceived a lack of autonomy in accessing support for the child as often other children were prioritised to access specialist intervention by the school SENCo.

- "We've tried but we're not specialists, we don't know anything really." (Participant 12)
- "I felt inadequate. I thought I used to be able to sort these children out so I did feel inadequate with myself because before I had been very strict." (Participant 5)

4.4.10. Theme 10. Perceptions of EP's role.

Participants generally had very positive perceptions of the EP's role and through their experiences of EPs facilitating processes, implementing intervention programmes and conducting observations and assessments, reported that the EP's contribution had been useful when they had involvement from an EP. Descriptions of the school EP included "fantastic"

and "very good" and doing "a great job". EP time was valued although was perceived as very precious and extremely limited.

4.4.10.1. Facilitating processes.

Three participants reported that the EP facilitated procedures including referrals to others services and generally the statementing process.

- "Our Ed Psych is great at trying to push through our statements but it's still not certain that she's going to be." (Participant 9)
- "...she did push forward the anxiety clinic referral so from that point of view that was the most useful." (Participant 1)

4.4.10.2. Implementing & modelling intervention programmes.

Participant six provided a specific example of an intervention programme initially modelled by the EP.

• "Yes, that was where the Educational Psychologist and mum and her, then the next week mum went out of the room. Then the Educational Psychologist carried that on for a few weeks and she introduced me and the SENCo took it over." (Participant 6)

4.4.10.3. Observing, assessing & diagnosing.

Several participants (N= 4) reported that EPs had conducted observations of children both at home and in school.

• "Participant 6: Yes, she [EP] went to her [selectively mute child] house to see how she behaved at her house, which is something that we wouldn't be doing.

Researcher: So you wouldn't be doing home visits?

Participant 6: No. So her doing that gave us an idea what she was like outside the class." (Participant 6)

In addition, one participant perceived that the EP's role included diagnosis.

• "Researcher: Did she have any other conditions or diagnoses?

Participant 1: Anxiety. It was diagnosed by the Ed Psych when I taught her and she went to the anxiety clinic." (Participant 1)

4.4.10.4. Lack of autonomy over work.

Two participants reported that the EP's time was determined by others including the SENCo and dictated by the LA.

- "She [SENCo] is excellent and obviously she drives the Ed Psych's time because she says look we need to prioritise this child." (Participant 1)
- "They gave you practical advice but obviously it's the time that they provide as well and they would come in to work with the child within the setting as well but I suppose it would be the frequency that they could come into school and help but financial constraints and the impact upon that rather than it being something that the Ed Psych

can actually control herself so that's quite tricky." (Participant 18)

4.4.10.5. Gatekeeper to resources.

One participant viewed the potential of accessing greater resources through the EP.

• "I suppose sometimes their writing a report gives you weighting to get support in the classroom which we've seen that here with other cases. I was lucky because I was in an Infant class and had two children who were really and was over the magic thirty and due to some protesting, I was given a TA with me full-time so I did have an additional adult but it would take a lot of time to do conversations and maybe an Educational Psychologists' report would have got me more hours." (Participant 4)

5.5. Question 1: How Does Working with a Selectively Mute Child Impact on a Teacher's Feelings?

Participants reported both positive and negative feelings about their experiences of working with a selectively mute child. Overall, there were many more negative experiences reported than positive. Therefore, two themes emerged related to this research question as visually presented in Figure 8.

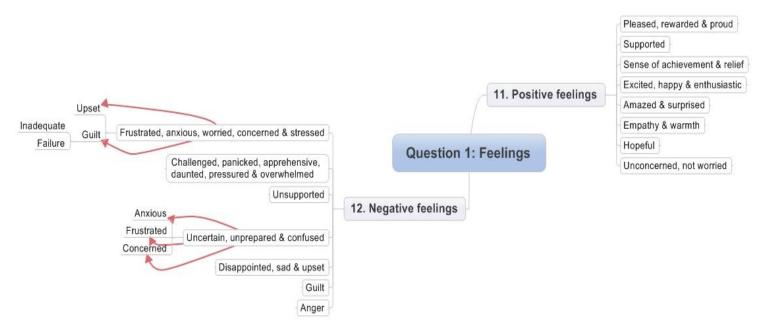


Figure 8. Thematic map illustrating the themes and sub-themes identified in relation to teachers' feelings.

4.5.1. Theme 11. Positive feelings.

Participants reported a range of positive emotions. These are listed in the following subsections.

4.5.1.1. Pleased, rewarded & proud.

Some participants (N= 8) felt that working with a selectively mute child was a rewarding experience although these included positive feelings relating to incidents when the child

began speaking.

- "The main thing is the positive feelings of the reward you can get of seeing the small steps develop." (Participant 11)
- "Not that I can think of, it's a very rewarding experience actually. It's good to challenge yourself everyone now and again!" (Participant 14)

4.5.1.2. Supported.

The majority of participants (N= 16) reported feeling supported and the sources of support ranged from colleagues, TAs, parents and outside professionals. The SENCo was the most often cited source of support.

- "She [SENCo] literally gave me some key steps and guidance of what is selective mutism, strategies that I could use that other teachers had used." (Participant 10)
- "My TA was absolutely brilliant. She was a very experienced TA and so with her making up resources and the fact that we had really good EAL resources in school was were really useful." (Participant 2)

4.5.1.3. Sense of achievement & relief.

Feelings of achievement and relief were reported by two participants although these sometimes emanated when the selectively child began speaking.

• "Then when he did start speaking, just thought thank goodness for that because you feel inadequate sometimes" (Participant 5)

• "Researcher: And can you recall an occasion when you felt most good because you said at one point you felt good.

Participant 8: I felt good mainly for him but obviously it's an achievement for us as well when he started to use the toilet because he was quite a big lad and to be in nappies." (Participant 8)

4.5.1.4. Excited, happy & enthusiastic.

Three participants reported being excited about the prospect of having a selectively mute child in their class because they viewed it as a new learning opportunity.

- "I was very excited to have a child, it sounds awful and quite strange but it was quite a good opportunity for me because it was something that I was interested in."

 (Participant 17)
- "I didn't do basically pretty much everything the teacher was doing so when I started to get key children and especially when I had a selectively mute child because I'd never worked with a child previous to that. I thought that would be quite interesting just to see." (Participant 3)

4.5.1.5. Amazed & surprised.

Feelings of amazement and surprise tended to emanate from hearing the child speaking although one of the four participants reported feeling amazed at the will power required by the child to remain mute.

• "But it was quite a surprise when I first heard him rattling on with all this language. I don't think anything really prepares you for that." (Participant 8)

"Then one boy who was of middle ability who was prompting her but they stood up at

the front of the whole class. It was with no expression, no intonation. Nothing like that

but she did [speak] and I was just left with my mouth open. I thought how amazing

that she did." (Participant 9)

4.5.1.6. *Empathy & warmth.*

Seven participants reported feeling empathy towards the child and warmth which increased

when the child began speaking to them.

"I was just very sorry for him because I myself had moved around schools as a child,

in ten different schools so I had experience of going into school and having to make

friends and feeling shy so it was just a challenge for me." (Participant 17)

"Participant 6: It started off frustrating because knowing someone can talk and is

choosing not to, it's quite frustrating. But when we did the groups and I heard her

talking and it made me see her differently as a child.

Researcher: Right, in what way?

Participant 6: I think it made me warm to her a little bit more, I could see how she

would be like a little bit more like giggling and laughing which I didn't see in the

classroom. It was lovely." (Participant 6)

4.5.1.7. Hopeful.

One participant reported feeling hopeful for the child to speak particularly when the child

showed signs of pre-speech behaviour.

74

• "The first was when, last term for about six weeks she just kept holding my hand or stroking my arm or touching my back and her mum came in and saw her and said, "that's what she did when she started talking", so I knew that was a sign that she wanted to talk, that was really good and there've been a couple of times in the last couple of weeks where we've been playing games like hangman and talking to her friends and I had to say the name of an animal beginning with the last letter of the animal." (Participant 14)

4.5.1.8. Unconcerned, not worried.

Two participants said they were not worried or concerned about working with the selectively mute child.

• "I suppose speaking to the Special Educational Needs teacher but as I say whenever I speak to her there's a list of other children that need to speak to her about first and I haven't actually spoken to her about xxx and also because xxx is achieving in all of her subjects and she's quite a capable child. I'm not concerned about her. I'm not concerned that she's not learning because she is so she's absorbing it all she's just not communicating by speaking but I would for my own interest like to know more about possibly why she is selectively mute, yes." (Participant 13)

4.5.2. Theme 12. Negative feelings.

The majority of feelings described by participants were negative indicating that working with a selectively mute child is a stressful experience. Some emotions such as frustration often led to secondary emotions such as upset and guilt. The range of negative emotions are described

in detail in the following seven sub-sections.

4.5.2.1. Frustrated, anxious, worried, concerned & stressed.

The majority of participants (N= 15) reported feeling concerned and worried at some point during their work with the selectively mute child. Frustration was the most frequently cited emotion. The sources of frustration differed such as a result of the child not reciprocating speech and being socially excluded by the child. Yet one of the greatest sources of frustration were the difficulties and challenges of assessment because teachers could not check the child's level of understanding and because participants were often required to give the child levels which they did not feel reflected their true abilities. Issues of concern often extended beyond the immediate present such as anticipating future difficulties.

- "I felt very frustrated when I heard her speaking to the other children and not to being able to get her to speak to me." (Participant 2)
- "Clearly he's not developing as a person and functioning within a social world because he's not speaking so that's frustrating and ultimately upsetting because you think how is he going to function as an adult because he's not speaking properly?"

 (Participant 7)
- "I worried a great deal about her and how she was going to cope at secondary school." (Participant 1)
- "What skills is he going to have in the workplace as an adult when at 9, 10, 11 years of age he can't write properly." (Participant 7)
- "If I've given her the level that I know she is, it's not justified. So then that would be

deemed bad for me so I have to give her a level that I have evidence for which doesn't match up to her ability which is the most frustrating part." (Participant 12)

4.5.2.2. Challenged, panicked, apprehensive, daunted, pressured & overwhelmed.

Most participants (N= 16) reported feeling challenged, panicked, apprehensive, daunted, pressured and overwhelmed. One participant particularly reported feeling daunted by the prospect of working with a child who had a condition that she had no experience of working with previously and had little or no knowledge of. This was exacerbated when participants had other children in their class with special educational needs (SEN).

- "I'm a teacher and I love children but I think any teacher feels like that when they get a child with a lot more needs than others. How am I going to cope with putting all the things that she needs into a routine? How am I going to cope with that and 29 other children?" (Participant 9)
- "I still worry that I still haven't done enough of what I need to do and panic with that initial oh my God I haven't done enough. When I'm reviewing what I'm supposed to have done with her. So yes worry I suppose it's a long term thing." (Participant 9)
- "It was a bit daunting at first." (Participant 14)

The greatest contributions to feeling challenged, panicked, apprehensive, daunted, pressured and overwhelmed were the difficulties encountered by participants when attempting to assess the selectively mute child. 12 participants described the challenges of conducting assessments.

- "It's a massive challenge, I mean I can give him a written reading paper but that doesn't assess things like pronunciation or inflection or things like that so you're working blind really. It's incredibly difficult." (Participant 7)
- "I hand on heart, fundamentally don't know how he's progressing in certain areas of the curriculum because I can't have a dialogue with him." (Participant 7)

4.5.2.3. Unsupported.

Four participants felt unsupported and would have liked to be offered support from outside agencies.

- "It would have been nice to be offered [support] and then decide, I suppose their [outside agencies] help would have been appreciated." (Participant 8)
- "I don't know, I don't think I had really any support particularly with her other than communicating with the other teachers that she doesn't talk." (Participant 13)

4.5.2.4. Uncertain, unprepared & confused.

Eight participants reported being unsure of the most effective course of action and this sometimes generated secondary emotions such as frustration, anxiety and concern. Feelings of uncertainty were also on occasions compounded by others.

- "Sometimes it feels a bit like I don't know if I've done the right thing. Whether I've been helpful or whether I've been a hindrance." (Participant 14)
- "Speaking to other people everyone gave me different advice or none whatsoever and she did come round and I think had I known that she would come round within the

4.5.2.5. Disappointed, sad & upset.

Four participants reported feeling disappointed, sad and upset. Also, participants on occasions mirrored children's feelings of sadness and distress and felt disappointed when they were unable to resolve the mute behaviour or "fix the problem".

- "Yes and I think with any child, you want them to make progress in your class and with her, the progress was so small that you feel almost a bit disappointed that you haven't fixed it, even though it's been going on for years." (Participant 6)
- "I actually as a child took to him straight away because he was really, he appeared like a gentle giant. So if something upset him, he would really cry. He'd come up to you and make your heart feel, oh, poor little thing." (Participant 8)

4.5.2.6. Guilt.

Guilt was an emotion that presented as a primary and also a secondary emotion generated through feelings of perceived inadequacy and failure resulting in guilt (N= 5). For instance, teachers felt "selfish" for feeling overwhelmed and begrudging having another child in their class with complex needs. Also, participants reported feeling very guilty when their strategies were unsuccessful and jeopardised the child speaking. Participants reported feeling guilty particularly because selectively mute children were not disruptive and because they felt responsible for the child's lack of progress.

• "I think one of the problems with xxx is that she's so quiet in class that she can go

unnoticed. In a way, she gets lots and lots of attention from single adults around the school because of all the interventions but during lessons, I feel guilty because I don't spend enough time with her." (Participant 9)

• "We were going through the register and she just answered "good morning". And I said "that's wonderful xxx, it's really good to hear you speaking, I'm really pleased to hear you speaking". And it was the worst thing I could have done, I'd drawn attention to the fact that she had spoken so I felt really bad because I'd set the whole thing back." (Participant 2)

4.5.2.7. Anger.

One participant reported feeling angry towards the selectively mute child's mother but no participants reported feeling angry towards the selectively mute children.

• "I was quite angry actually, I felt quite angry because she wasn't listening and me going over after the long day at school, spending an hour in the house to help them was not helping, it was actually making it worse and I found I was quite angry about that..." (Participant 5)

4.6. Question 1: How Does Working with a Selectively Mute Child Impact on a Teacher's Behaviours?

Participants' behaviours mostly consisted of strategies which were implemented to educate, communicate, develop a relationship and facilitate social interactions. 11 strategies were cited to support the selectively mute child in school (see Figure 9).

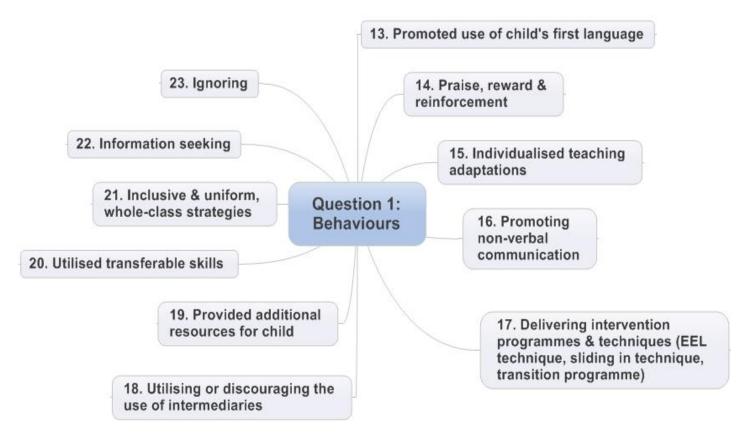


Figure 9. Thematic map illustrating the 11 themes identified in relation to teachers' behaviours.

4.6.1. Theme 13. Promoted use of child's first language.

When the selectively mute child also had English as an Additional Language (EAL), participant two reported promoting the child's first language by asking the child's mother to bring into school Nepalese books, reading books in the child's first language and encouraging

the child to speak in their first language.

• "Because one of the first things we do if he have a child in our school that's not an English speaker then we read them books in their own language, read them aloud to the class so they're talking their own language to the class, joint communication."

(Participant 2)

4.6.2. Theme 14. Praise, reward & reinforcement.

One third of participants (N= 7) reported providing extra praise and encouragement for the selectively mute child.

- "I think I've relaxed with her quite a bit and I just treat her like every other child in my class but just give her extra bits of encouragement or praise that she might need and it seems to be working OK." (Participant 10)
- "It was all encouragement, all praise, she did respond well to praise and stickers and that kind of thing but she had just got that mind set from probably a historic thing and we struggled to break it." (Participant 1)

4.6.3. Theme 15. Individualised teaching adaptations.

16 participants reported implementing individualised teaching adaptations which included a range of strategies such as promoting the child's learning through parallel play, modelling and scaffolding and through promoting collaborative interactions through careful pairing and group work, providing additional thinking time for the child and triple or double teaching so that the lesson incorporated focused group work to adequately differentiate.

- "I would give him time to think about his answers so he would freeze straight away and then I would say, "xxx I'm going to ask the other children and then I'm going to come back to you at the end and I would like to have an answer" so giving him time and letting him know that I expected an answer from him." (Participant 17)
- "Especially we have talk partners so I always try and put her in a three so that the other two can converse and she can take part." (Participant 11)

4.6.4. Theme 16. Promoting non-verbal communication.

The majority of participants (N= 16) used strategies such as responding to and promoting non-verbal communication such as enabling the child to scribe and using a verbal grading system.

- "So we did a lot of whiteboard work so if he wanted to answer a question, he'd write it on the whiteboard and show the class or if he was hurt, I'd say "point to where on my body it hurts" so then I could judge where he was hurt and then we'd do a grading system out of 10 with 10 being I'm in lots of pain and then that way he could tell, if it was above 7 then I'd say "Well then I need to have a look", that's how he would have the control still." (Participant 4)
- "Using interactive whiteboards gave him a way of speaking without using any verbal communication." (Participant 4)

4.6.5. Theme 17. Delivering intervention programmes & techniques (Effective Early Learning (EEL) technique, sliding in technique, transition programme).

Eight participants reported other strategies that involved specific interventions such as the

sliding in technique and required collective involvement of additional adults.

- "...it started off with the girl and her mum and the SENCo and they played games.

 Gradually, mum left the room and gradually I came into the room and they carried on playing." (Participant 6)
- "We use EEL, Effective Early Learning, an observation where you look at the child and write down what they're doing at the time and there's a scale of interaction so we've got a chart for all the children and that helps us then to assess how they're interacting with each other and how on task they are, what stage of play they're at."

 (Participant 19)

4.6.6. Theme 18. Utilising or discouraging the use of intermediaries.

Five participants reported utilising intermediaries such as the selectively mute child's friend to intervene when necessary although the effectiveness of this strategy was mixed. Two participants actively discouraged other pupils speaking for the child.

- "Whispering to her friend is always encouraged because often her friends might say xxx needs the toilet or can xxx get a tissue. You encourage it but you can't encourage it too much because it's taking the emphasis off xxx to talk." (Participant 12)
- "There was another Nepalese child in school we tried to get to talk to her but she completely refused that, she wouldn't communicate with them whatsoever."

 (Participant 2)
- "Yes and if she wanted to say something in the classroom, she would often whisper it to a friend and they would try to speak for her, which we tried to discourage."

4.6.7. Theme 19. Provided additional resources for child.

Five participants reported putting in extra resources to support the selectively mute child such as assigning more TA time to the child and creating Individual Pupil Provision Plans (IPPs) or Individual Pupil Profiles (IPPs).

- "She responded well to stickers and team points, the things that children usually do respond well to but we didn't do anything special other than the fact that she did have a lot of TA support and our family support worker also got very engaged in the transition programme to our secondary school which was very helpful for her because as we identified very early on that was a real thing." (Participant 1)
- "So we did have a meeting with mum and set up an Individual Pupil Profile with one single target to verbalise something when his name was called in the register because we weren't hugely concerned because he spoke at home." (Participant 20)

4.6.8. Theme 20. Utilised transferable skills.

All participants reported that their initial training was not helpful in their work with the selectively mute child but some reported drawing on experiences and using strategies gained from CPD training and working with children with various conditions.

• "So I'd never heard of it [Selective Mutism] but then I suppose because I'd worked with babies and because babies don't talk and you use gestures with babies and so on I think, I suppose it came naturally." (Participant 3)

- "I suppose working with children with ASD probably gave me the most insight into these sorts of conditions. I think it would be fair to say that any sort of training I had done, I could apply similar techniques, minimise change, she didn't like any sort of change. It's those sorts of things that I could apply but not the teacher training..."

 (Participant 1)
- "I think the training for Autism as well was very helpful. Although she wasn't Autistic, a lot of those teaching ideas crossover from one to the other and although she didn't fit in either of those brackets actually using those methods really helped with finding a way to communicate with her." (Participant 2)

4.6.9. Theme 21. Inclusive & uniform, whole-class strategies.

Eight participants did not make allowances for the child's mutism and adopted a uniform and inclusive whole-class approach such as setting clear expectations and boundaries although some participants presented as conflicted about making any allowances for the selectively mute child.

- "He was included in everything. We didn't make any special arrangements for him because he just took part with all the other children whatever it was." (Participant 7)
- "Clearly because if the class of children see you allowing one child doing one thing and you're not structuring that child they'll say, "Why's he getting away with it?" so you have to be very careful, it's a balancing act really." (Participant 7)
- "Exactly, my expectation has always been that she will be a normal member of our class. This is probably completely the wrong thing to do but if she's talking to her friends and we said that we're going to do silent working, then I will say to her, "You

need to be doing silent working" and you can see her thinking [looks left to right]."

(Participant 14)

4.6.10. Theme 22. Information seeking.

Participants (N= 11) sought information from a whole range of sources such as the internet, books, published research and literature, the child's family and the child's previous teachers.

• "I contacted his school who said that he did talk but was very, very quiet but did speak to the teacher there so I think he already had social difficulties..." (Participant 17)

4.6.11. Theme 23. Ignoring.

Four participants reported that an effective strategy was not to make a fuss of the child and ignore the fact that the child was mute.

- "I think the more I could actually subconsciously ignore her as opposed to consciously making the effort I think that's what really helped her and it got to right near the end of the year before we started hearing little bits of speech and it wasn't until after the summer holidays and she'd moved into the next class that she actually started talking completely normally." (Participant 2)
- "Not to make a huge issue so when he did answer the register, not to make a huge deal of that because that would draw attention to him and he didn't want that so it would just be a smile and that was enough for him whereas with another child if they did something really good then you would make a huge fuss." (Participant 17)

4.7. Question 2: Do Teacher's Thoughts, Feelings & Behaviours Change & Develop Over Time?

The diary study was originally intended to answer this research question. However, as previously mentioned, there was a 100% drop out rate from all four participants who had consented to take part in the diary study so the following themes were drawn from teachers' reflective experiences. Participants who were working with a selectively mute child at the time of interviewing, were asked to reflect on how their thoughts, feelings and behaviours had changed since the beginning of the academic year and therefore reflecting on a period of eight months. The thematic map below (figure 10) illustrates the three themes and four subthemes which emerged.

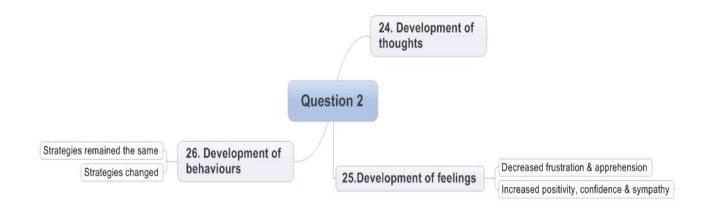


Figure 10. Thematic map illustrating the three themes and four sub-themes identified in relation to question 2.

4.7.1. Theme 24. Development of thoughts.

There was a change over time in participants' thoughts mostly related to their priorities and expectations of speech. Participants often became more accepting of the mutism over time and reduced their expectations of speech and five participants placed greater emphasis on

speech over time. In some instances, participants also reviewed their priorities towards the end of their work with the selectively mute child and valued the emotional well-being of the child more than the child communicating verbally.

- "Yes, now I realise that she's not going to talk so I have just accepted it."

 (Participant 13)
- "Only in the degree of you're happy to say one word to me so now maybe can we encourage you to say a bit more or in a different situation because otherwise it would only be when he approached me to ask me something." (Participant 20)
- "I suppose also the attainment and achievement of a child is particularly building confident, comfortable individuals who can deal with occurrences and situations which are far more important than making sure they know about the ancient Greeks [laughter] ... I've changed my priorities slightly." (Participant 20)

4.7.2. Theme 25. Development of feelings.

Over the duration of their work with the selectively mute child, participants' feelings changed and these feelings were strongly influenced by whether the child began speaking or not.

4.7.2.1. Decreased frustration & apprehension.

The current research found that teachers of selectively mute children who did not begin speaking during the year became increasingly anxious which supports previous research by Cline and Baldwin (1998) who stated that, "...class teachers of mute children will themselves become increasingly anxious" (p. 76). However, in cases when the selectively mute child began speaking, the participants' apprehension reduced over the duration of their work with

the child and in one instance greatly changed the participants' perceptions of the child.

In fact my apprehension has lessened and in fact she's contributing more than I

thought she would and I thought she would literally sit back and do nothing like

contributing in class discussions." (Participant 10)

"Participant 6: It started off frustrating because knowing someone can talk and is

choosing not to, it's quite frustrating. But when we did the groups and I heard her

talking and it made me see her differently as a child.

Researcher: Right, in what way?

Participant 6: I think it made me warm to her a little bit more, I could see how she

would be like a little bit more like giggling and laughing which I didn't see in the

classroom. It was lovely." Participant 6)

4.7.2.2. Increased positivity, confidence & sympathy.

Five participants felt more positive over time as they learned more about the condition

although again the levels of positivity at the end of working with the child were influenced by

whether the child had begun speaking or not.

"The more I found out about it the more positive I feel about it now." (Participant 19)

"To begin with but I was, I dealt with him perhaps matter of factly but then I think as

time went by felt sympathetic towards him." (Participant 5)

90

4.7.3. Theme 26. Development of behaviours.

Participants' behaviours tended to be exhibited through the strategies they utilised when working with the selectively mute child and these tended to be polarised over time into strategies remaining the same and strategies changing over time.

4.7.3.1. Strategies remained the same.

Five participants specifically stated that their strategies had remained the same over time mostly because they found them effective.

• "Not really, they've [strategies] worked and she's comfortable with that so we keep with that." (Participant 12)

4.7.3.2. Strategies changed.

Most participants (N= 14) reported that their strategies changed over time, sometimes because they were effective and were no longer required, and other times because they proved ineffective, such as trying to trick the child into speaking

- "It [strategies] did really because we knew that he understood us so as we knew xxx better that he understood us so we didn't have to use those things anymore."

 (Participant 8)
- "I have tried a few times to trick her into talking but that doesn't work and I guess now I've just accepted that she's not ready to talk yet and she does communicate with me in other ways so and I guess she's going to talk when she's ready." (Participant 13)

One participant also reported struggling to change her behaviour towards the child when the child began speaking because her responses had become habitual and were designed to accommodate the child's mute behaviour.

• "And it was quite hard at first because you were so used to using the gestures with him because you didn't want him to think oh well she's doing everything for me so I'm going to shut up again. It was trying to forget that you didn't need to use gestures anymore." (Participant 3)

This supports Cline and Baldwin's (1998) description that when implementing an intervention, some teachers may struggle with changing their habitual approaches of addressing the child.

4.8. Question 3: What Mediating Factors Influence the Kinds of Experiences Teachers Have?

There were several factors identified that mediated the kind of experiences participants had.

These seven factors are illustrated in Figure 11.

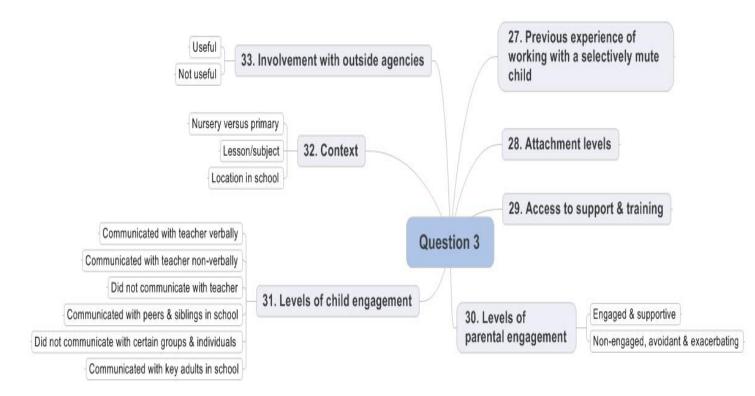


Figure 11. Thematic map illustrating the themes and sub-themes identified in relation to question 3.

4.8.1. Theme 27. Previous experiences of working with a selectively mute child.

Almost all participants (N= 19) reported that their experiences of working with a selectively mute child had been, and would be useful, if they worked with a selectively mute child in the future. Overall, participants who did not have previous experience of working with a selectively mute child felt more uncertain and panicked than participants who had previous experience.

• "I'd never come across that child before and I really didn't know where to start."

(Participant 2)

• "Quite a tricky one really because I suppose having had prior experience, having read a bit about it, I wasn't worried about it." (Participant 20)

On reflection, two participants thought that greater experience led to increased confidence and in future would impact less negatively on their emotions.

- "I just didn't know quite how to but now with more experience and talking to the previous teacher and the SENCo and mum I've got more confidence with that."

 (Participant 10)
- "I think I probably wouldn't have the apprehension because I know I have been able to deal with it competently and it hadn't been as big an issue as I thought it may be."

 (Participant 11)
- "Definitely, I wouldn't be so apprehensive anymore about having a child with Selective Mutism. Many of the strategies that I use now I would definitely use again because they have worked really well so yes I think it would be really good. When she goes up to another class teacher I would very much tell them not to worry, this works, this worked with me, try and go along these lines and give them lots of strategies of what to do and then just see how it's going and support them just "ask how is it going, how is she doing, have you had a chance to speak to her?" And I think if another child came along I definitely wouldn't be so worried." (Participant 10)

One exception was a participant who struggled when the child did not respond in the same way as the other four selectively mute children she had worked with.

• "It was harder and I found that quite difficult because I had done all the ignoring. He had to obviously take part in lessons but it was very hard that he didn't respond like

the others who had just literally by half term or after half term had just started talking like the regular members of classes." (Participant 5)

4.8.2. Theme 28. Attachment levels.

Over half of the participants (N= 13) believed that speaking was inextricably linked to attachment and relationship building; lack of speech hindered the development of relationship building. For instance, some participants believed that the mute behaviour served to enable the child to escape from the situation and avoid forming relationships.

- "When the adult comes in, and you see it as she moves through school when there are adults that she doesn't have a close relationship with, her whole body. It's like she breathes in and pulls her whole body up. I think an element of it is being wary of building relationships with people." (Participant 14)
- "I think it's also a way for her to not have the relationships with people."

 (Participant 14)
- "What tends to happen, it seems to me that it's related to the relationship with the adult. She's talked much more towards the end of the year than the beginning of the year and she does talk in front of some adults but she won't talk to adults if you know what I mean." (Participant 14)

These descriptions support the 'freeze-defense' stance described by Lesser-Katz (1986) as a response to perceived danger and are similar to previous literature by Buck (1987) whose participants described some selectively mute children stopping an activity when they became aware of their teacher approaching. Participants appeared to particularly invest in developing a relationship with the child through strategies such as drawing on common interests and in

one case when the child began speaking, the participants' sense of self-changed from individual to dyadic (me to us).

- "Just to try and sort of include her but also she was artistic and my degree was in Art as well so we had that come interest, so when we did Art lessons and things we would make a big deal of her work and make sure it was displayed with others."

 (Participant 1)
- "I'd ask him a question and he would answer and sit and talk to me like one to one conversations. It was good for us because he was in pants and started talking and it all changed when he went to school." (Participant 8)

These attachments to the children were often reciprocated and were long-term continuing after the teacher had ceased to teach the child.

• "They're going back to Kenya because of the troubles here. He's been nagging mum for him to come in and say goodbye to me but he came in yesterday and he wouldn't speak to me. And yet I said to him, "You've been nagging mum to come in and say goodbye". He cuddled me but he wouldn't speak and when I said that to him, he just grinned so he knew that he was doing it." (Participant 8)

4.8.3. Theme 29. Access to training & support.

All participants reported that their initial training had not been helpful to their work with the selectively mute child.

• "It never even came up in my training until I got here and she started and then it was pretty much all of us, it was like the blind leading the blind really." (Participant 14)

However, two participants reported that they had access to training and support and when this was available, participants were less anxious and less uncertain about their approach to working with the selectively mute child.

• "I think the EAL training that we'd all had was very helpful. I think the training for Autism as well was very helpful." (Participant 2)

4.8.4. Theme 30. Levels of parental engagement.

Interactions with parents ranged from positive and collaborative (N= 9) to avoidant and non-engaged (N= 6) and this impacted profoundly on participants' feelings during the duration of their work with the selectively mute child. Five participants did not present with a strong view of the parental levels of engagement.

4.8.4.1. Engaged & supportive.

When parents were supportive and engaged as reported by half of the participants, this facilitated solution-focused processes. For instance, one teacher even attributed the success of a referral to the anxiety clinic as due to the parent's collaboration. Also, working effectively with parents was a key criteria for teachers to feel successful.

- "So good communication with the parents was vital." (Participant 4)
- "Her mum was very good, she'd come in because she had an IEP and not because of these problems it was more of an academic thing and so mum was very good at coming in to talk to us. That's how we managed to get the referral to the Ed Psych and how we managed to get the referral to the anxiety clinic. That involved the parents being involved in that." (Participant 1)

4.8.4.2. Non-engaged, avoidant & exacerbating.

Parents not engaging, being avoidant or exacerbating the situation were a key source of anxiety for participants and were specifically reported by five participants. Participants showed some insight into some of the reasons for parents being avoidant such as being perceived as inadequate or a fear of their child being labelled.

• "I think they were just convinced that he was going to be labelled with something else. I think they'd done a certain amount of reading as well and I think things like the lack of facial gestures and lack of social communication and eye contact, I think some people had banded the Autistic Spectrum around and I think that was at the back of their head. I think this is what their worry was." (Participant 4)

The only reference a participant made to feeling angry, was in relation to working with the selectively mute child's parent whom the participant believed exacerbated the situation and resulted in the participant withdrawing the mother's involvement which proved to be an effective strategy in enabling the child to speak.

- "I was quite angry actually, I felt quite angry because she wasn't listening and me going over after the long day, spending an hour in the house to help them was not helping, it was actually making it worse and I found I was quite angry about that and thinking I don't quite know what to do with this because I can't have a go at you because you're a parent at school." (Participant 5)
- "So I did stop the mum's involvement because it wasn't appropriate for this particular child. It was absolutely hindering anything that we were trying to do and in fact he got better and he's talking fine now." (Participant 5)

4.8.5. Theme 31. Levels of child engagement.

Children's levels of engagement ranged greatly with respect to their engagement or not with their teachers, peers, siblings and other significant adults in school. It was not whether the selectively mute child spoke or not that mediated participants' experiences, but rather whether the child engaged in any form, such as being academically successful or attempting to communicate non-verbally. The nature of these interactions are described in the following sub-sections.

4.8.5.1. Communicated with teacher verbally.

Most participants (N= 14) reported that the selectively mute child did speak to them although this was often in whispers and included one word answers.

- "Then we could every now and again the teaching assistant would use a word to the other children and then she spoke to me one day. We were going through the register and she just answered "good morning." (Participant 2)
- "We then moved onto him saying, "I'm here" very quietly so we did that for a while and then one day in the summer term, he just said, "Good morning Mrs xxx" and he's not looked back since." (Participant 17)

4.8.5.2. Communicated with teacher non-verbally.

Most participants (N= 16) reported that the selectively mute child did communicate with them non-verbally and these included a range of strategies such as nodding, pointing, tapping, putting their hand up to answer questions and facial gestures such as smiling and making eye

contact.

- "Yes, she'll put her hand up and I'll say, "Oh, xxx has an idea, who's going to tell me it?" (Participant 14)
- "But with me as the class teacher she clearly saw me as someone she could trust and rely upon but it was very much a nod and a shake and a one word answer."

 (Participant 1)

4.8.5.3. Did not communicate with teacher.

Participants experienced a range of negative emotions when the selectively mute child refused to communicate in any way with them. Seven participants explicitly reported that the selectively mute child did not communicate with them. This was especially so when the child was expressionless which made it difficult to make inferences about the child's feelings.

- "With me, she won't say anything." (Participant 13)
- "He had a blank face really and it was difficult to know if he was happy or sad or what ...at first he was just like a marionette puppet in the class that you got nothing."

 (Participant 5)

4.8.5.4. Communicated with peers and siblings in school.

Selectively mute children were cited by nine participants as being very selective in choosing who to communicate with and their friendships were often characterised by dependent relationships. This was useful on one hand because some participants utilised the friend as an intermediary, while other participants found it frustrating and discouraged it because they did

not want to reinforce the mute behaviour and foster the child's sense of dependency.

- "When he was in Year 2, it slightly altered so he became dependent on one boy and by the end of the year he was whispering to him in class." (Participant 4)
- "Occasionally he would use hand gestures but generally up until Year 2 he didn't really communicate and the only person he would communicate with was his older brother and that would literally be through hand gestures and eye contact."

 (Participant 4)

4.8.5.5. Did not communicate with certain groups and individuals.

A small number of participants (N= 3) reported that the selectively mute child did not communicate with anyone in school although they were still often able to ensure that their needs were met.

- "They [classmates] just knew to pass him the train or he would pass them the train so there was no communication, no eye contact." (Participant 3)
- "There was another Nepalese child in school we tried to get to talk to her but she completely refused that, she wouldn't communicate with them whatsoever."

 (Participant 2)

4.8.5.6. Communicated with key adults in school.

More often (N= 6) selectively mute children communicated with key adults in school whom they were familiar with and had a chance to develop some form of attachment to.

- "She just cannot communicate with virtually anybody apart from her friends it seems and my TA who has been with her last year and this year. I obviously didn't have her last year so she knows her better and she does talk more to the TA but when she's sat down doing activities and things but nowhere near enough to really make progress."

 (Participant 9)
- "In school, the TA in my class, she's had the same TA for two years and now in the playground she'll talk to her usually in an audible voice but the rest of the adults whispering or mouthing words." (Participant 10)

4.8.6. Theme 32. Context.

The context was a very important factor in mediating the selectively mute child's levels of communication and the experiences of the participants in terms of managing their own and the school's expectations of the child.

4.8.6.1. Nursery versus primary.

Two participants believed that teachers were able to adopt a more nurturing role when working with children in nursery and reception classes. For instance, one participant argued that for children in the early years, teachers did not have the added demands of assigning levels to children.

- "And I do think in primary schools you do take much more of a nurturing role than maybe other forms of teaching and I think it does maintain that." (Participant 9)
- "Participant 5: You get that a lot down there [Reception] when they start doing

things for the first time, you do go a bit. You're just so pleased for them and proud of them and I did feel relieved and proud. Really proud of him, but he could talk now. It's emotional being down in the early years [laughter].

Researcher: [Laughter] I can imagine. I taught Foundation One for a year and it is very emotive work.

Participant 5: Absolutely, yes because you do bond because you are their carer. More so than the older children." (Participant 5)

However, the majority of participants (N=11) cited the difficulties of assessment particularly as the child got older and there were curriculum demands. Therefore, the significance of the setting being a mediating factor seemed to be that the pressure on both the children (to produce speech) and the teachers (to elicit speech) seemed to increase as they went up the school.

• "It's a difficult question, because we're in Nursery, we work in small groups anyway but I can see higher up that it would make a huge amount of difference but at the moment because they have so much free choice and it's up to them whether they come up and speak to an adult although we gently encourage them to come in and engage with us, there's no pressure there at all so it's a good environment now to make a difference, not a huge amount so obviously we've gone and done our own research."

(Participant 19)

4.8.6.2. Lesson/subject.

The lesson or subject was also a mediating factor in influencing the level of the selectively mute child's participation and therefore ultimately the participants' experience. Six

participants reported that when the child struggled with a subject, they would become less engaged and often "shut down". However, when they were good at, or enjoyed a subject, then they would communicate often non-verbally and be engaged in the lesson. Only one participant reported that the child's mutism was consistent across all lessons and subjects.

- "He was really good at Maths, so he would always answer in Maths. He would always have his hands up. He would explain using the whiteboard how he got an answer." (Participant 4)
- "He wasn't interested in writing activities at all. It was in the role play that he started talking. That's how it all started. He was far more engaged in the imaginative role play when he was huffing and puffing and going on a bear hunt and he laughed all the way through and chatted and all those noises." (Participant 5)

4.8.6.3. Location in school.

Three participants reported that the location in the school affected the child's levels of communication.

- "We see it sometimes in the playground when she's being picked up and suddenly she becomes a very different little girl even though she's only two or three metres away from you with her mum. So it's quite interesting." (*Participant 9*)
- "It was like talking to a mini adult but the minute he came through the gate, he wouldn't say a word." (Participant 8)

4.8.7. Theme 33. Involvement with outside agencies.

Finally, involvement with outside agencies also mediated participants' experiences. There were a range of outside professionals and services with whom participants reported having involvement with including Family Support Workers (FSWs), Speech and Language Therapists (SALTs), Social Services, Behaviour Support Officers (BSOs) and EPs. The most often cited involvement was from EP and SALT services equally (eight reports). There was a range in the perceived helpfulness of these services.

4.8.7.1. Useful

Overall, participants who had involvement from outside professionals, found their involvement useful in helping them to work more effectively (N= 12). In particular, involvement from EP and SALT services appeared to be the most highly valued.

- "Speaking to the Ed Psych definitely then I had some idea of where to go with it because it is a tricky one and it needs to be handled properly." (Participant 16)
- "The support that I got from the family support worker was very, very good and the parents." (Participant 1)

4.8.7.2. Not useful

A few participants (N= 3) reported that involvement from outside agencies was not helpful and one participant was frustrated by the lack of information regarding the outcome of her completion of a child protection form for the selectively mute child in her class when she had no feedback or follow up.

• "I had filled out all the child protection forms because I was concerned but we don't ever know what happened when it's passed onto social services." (Participant 2)

Of particular interest, was that some participants presented as somewhat disaffected by the whole process of accessing support and highlighted difficulties in inter-agency working. Instead of making a calculated request for the most useful, specialised service, one participant reported that the school made requests from several services in the hope of receiving some support within an adequate time frame.

• "I don't think it was an educational psychologist but then I don't think CAMHS are necessarily either. So we're just going to keep both options because they won't work together apparently so we just said we'll keep both running and we'll take whichever one comes first! [laughter] But we're used to knocking one on the head and then realising that one has a six month waiting list and just hoping that something comes through." (Participant 15)

4.8. Chapter Summary

The present chapter presented the research findings and the themes which emerged from the data organised under the five research questions. Chapter 5 examines the findings in greater detail and discusses the implications of the research in light of previous theory and research.

5. Discussion

5.1. Chapter Overview

The present study explores teachers' experiences of working with a selectively mute child. In particular, this is in relation to their thoughts, feelings and behaviours and how these change and develop over time. Additional factors that may serve to mediate teachers' experiences are also explored.

This chapter discusses and critically evaluates the findings of the study in relation to previous theory and research. The limitations of the study in conjunction with suggestions to overcome them are presented. The strengths of the research are also considered.

The qualitative findings elicited from a TA procedure are now discussed in relation to each of the five research questions.

5.2. The Distinctiveness of Concepts as Compositions of the Term Experience

Before discussing the findings for question 1 it is worth noting that, although the three concepts pertaining to experiences were constructed in order to explore in greater detail teachers' experiences and to provide some structure, these are not exclusively distinct and there is a degree of overlap and interconnectedness between themes and sub-themes.

For instance, some participants' feelings of frustration led to them to reframe their roles as being inadequate teachers. One example is participant five's perception of herself as a failure leading to feelings of guilt.

• "At times, I felt oh my goodness can I get through to this child so I felt a bit frustrated with myself that he was taking longer [laughter]. I felt inadequate." (Participant 5)

• "So I suppose when I look at her work sometimes, I think oh my goodness I've really failed with her quite a bit. I do feel guilt over it, yes." (Participant 9)

In turn, when some children began speaking over the course of the year, participants' emotions impacted on their attribution of their role.

• "I found it a challenge and obviously I said earlier about the sense of satisfaction when he did start talking. You feel proud that you made that breakthrough."

(Participant 3)

Thoughts, feelings and behaviours changed over time and were inter-linked as they impacted on each other. However, the concepts were effective in enabling a more detailed understanding of teachers' experiences.

5.3. Question 1: How Does Working with a Selectively Mute Child Impact on a Teacher's Thoughts?

A discussion of the nine themes which emerged from the findings relating to a teacher's thoughts are now presented.

5.3.1. Causal attributions of SM.

Some of the causal attributions relating to the child's SM were as a result of the child controlling and manipulating the situation. Such an explanation supports a psychodynamic explanation which highlights control as a key feature of the condition (Anthony, 1977). Burr's (1992) emphasis on the performative role of language was in line with the present study which found that some participants attributed the selectively mute child's lack of speech as a means of avoiding forming a relationship. This lack of performative action on behalf of the selectively mute child was interpreted as a means of control and in line with attachment theory as an inhibitor to developing social relationships. This finding supported the prediction that a lack of discourse hindered the development of teacher-pupil relationships. Therefore, language was not merely viewed as consisting of an expressive and communicative function but rather as a performance action to facilitate relationship building and constructing knowledge of the world.

Descriptions of control also support Cline and Baldwin's (1998) assertion that teachers are likely to view shy and anxious behaviour as controlling and manipulative. However, explanations of control mostly recognised that the behaviour was the child's attempt to avoid anxiety provoking situations. Such an explanation supports Yagenah et al.'s (2003) argument that children's mute behaviour attenuates anxiety levels as it enables the child to engage in

avoidance behaviour as opposed to speaking which is an anxiety provoking experience. Therefore Imich's (1998) descriptions of teacher-pupil relationships characterised by a "battle of wills" (p. 58) were not found. A possible reason for this may be that the selectively mute children generally present as extremely passive concurrent with previous research and indicative of heightened levels of anxiety (Anstendig, 1998). Only participant five, on reflection, thought that the child had been purposefully defiant during his time as a selective mute. This illustrates the reconstructing of thoughts as described by Walter and Peller (1996) who described how language enabled people to derive meaning from their lives.

However, no participants alluded to the child's oppositionality supporting Cunningham, McHolm, Boyle and Patel's (2004) finding that teachers reported selectively mute children as being less oppositional. A reason for this may be that none of the selectively mute children were cited as having Oppositional Defiant Disorder (ODD) as a co-morbid diagnosis supporting Black and Uhde's (1995) finding that ODD is an uncommon diagnosis among selectively mute children. In contrast to the purposeful nature of oppositionality, participants often alluded to the lack of control by describing their behaviour as being a "habit" that was difficult to "break out of". For example:

- "I worked in a nursery where a lot of them had lots of emotional issues so I had been immersed in children who can't help it so understood really that it's not a conscious decision." (Participant 5)
- "Although it was so consistent, she couldn't help it. She was a lovely little girl who was impeccably well behaved." (Participant 16)

Explanations relating to early traumatic incidents, transitions and negative experiences as causing or contributing to the SM were concurrent with previous literature stating that physical or psychological trauma could be predisposing factors and periods of transition

could be precipitating factors in the development of SM (Black & Uhde, 1995). In particular, participants' consideration of the impact an adverse home environment would make on the development of SM are congruent with Spasaro, Platt and Schaefer's (1999) findings that family psychopathology was the most frequently cited explanation. These included events such as a higher incidence of bereavement also supporting findings of Walters (2002) who noted that family stress during childhood was often cited. Such a causal explanation also dissociates the child's behaviour from the teacher and school by placing it into an external context, namely the home environment, supporting previously cited data of similar teachers' attributions related to children's misbehaviour (Miller, 2003). In previously cited literature regarding children's misbehaviour, such externalising attributions often resulted in the child being formally excluded from school (Gibbs, 2012).

However, none of the participants reported the selectively mute children being excluded due to their behaviour. A reason for this may be the divergence in the nature of the behaviour exhibited; children who misbehave tend often to display externalising or overt behaviours in contrast to selectively mute children who typically display internalising or covert behaviours.

Interestingly, no participants linked the development of SM with parental personality characteristics, contrasting with research which has found that parents of selectively mute children are more shy in comparison to controls (Kristensen & Torgersen, 2001) and three to four times more likely to present with general social phobia and avoidant personality disorder (Chavira, Shipon-Blum, Hitchcock, Cohan & Stein, 2007). Additionally, no inferences were made to social learning theory (Bandura, 1977) that the mothers of some selectively mute girls promoted a pattern of behaviour which was then adopted by the daughters (Scott, 1977). However, from a systemic perspective, there were some explanations to suggest that the family context served as a form of social reinforcement, for example, when the siblings of selectively mute children spoke for the child.

Six of the 20 selectively mute children were from immigrant families which differ from Bradley and Sloman's (1975) findings that SM prevalence rates are higher within immigrant families. Yet, there was support for the belief that the child may be experiencing a "culture shock" as cited in the case of one child immigrating to the UK from Nepal, although this was not necessarily described as due to parent-child emotional transference found in previous studies (Bradley & Sloman, 1975). Yet, on the two occasions when emotional transference was cited as a causal explanation for the child's development of SM, participants had an internal attribution of this. For instance, participant two stated that if she had been less stressed the child may have stressed less. This is somewhat of a novel finding. Additionally participant 20 had taught three selectively mute children and believed that SM was linked to the child having English as an additional language although there is no evidence at present to support this claim.

Furthermore, explanations of the selectively mute child's behaviour centred around escape and avoidance as a result of being afraid or experiencing a phobia and in order to establish a sense of safety, security & protection. This supports Bandura's (1977) social learning theory which explains SM as a method to reduce fear and anxiety (Blotcky & Looney, 1980). The selectively mute child's safety behaviours when repeated over a prolonged period of time became habitual as perceived by two participants and this interpretation is in line with behaviour orientated theories (Shreeve, 1999).

• "I do feel quite strongly that she just got so into a habit of not talking to suddenly talk would be just too much for her." (Participant 13)

Safety behaviours were not only designed to escape the temporary situation and physical environment but were also interpreted to avoid relationship building. This suggests that some participants were interpreting the silence as a form of retaliation inherent within Shreeve's

(1999) description of adult interactions. Therefore, teachers may be applying an adult communication model or post-linguistic connotations of speech onto the child, which in turn is anxiety provoking.

Finally, explanations for the development of SM were related to the child's character traits, attitudes and skills supporting Miller's (2003) findings that teachers' attributions regarding the causes of children's behaviour were often explained as due to the child's character. Participants' descriptions of the child being very anxious are supported by previous research which found that 74.1% of selectively mute children met the diagnostic criteria for anxiety and social phobia (Kristensen, 2000) and may lend further support for calls to classify SM as a form of social anxiety (Black & Uhde, 1995).

5.3.2. Causal attributions of speech.

Attributions of speech centred around the quality of the relationship with the adult and building trust. Participants often reported the selectively mute child communicating more readily with familiar adults. This supports previous findings of selectively mute children's characteristic inhibition with strangers (Lesser-Katz, 1986). No explicit references were made to parental distrust with reference to Goll's hypothesis (1979) that children followed the parental model of distrust. However, parental distrust was alluded to by participant two who reported that the parents were avoidant as demonstrated through avoiding interactions in school, not attending parents' evening and interpreting the teacher's concerns as a criticism of their parenting.

Another attribution of speech was due to the teachers' self belief in personally and professionally succeeding. This supports Miller's (1995) theory that when teachers are

successful in achieving a goal, they are more likely to internally attribute the success, believing the outcome to be a result of their own efforts. Teachers who had experienced the child speak during the duration of their work were also more likely to report positive feelings such as pride and reward.

5.3.3. Expectations.

Some participants expected the selectively mute child to speak and the shyness to improve over time in line with the findings of Kumpulainen et al. (1998). Several participants reported not expecting the child to speak which could have been problematic in that their expectations may have influenced their behaviours such as utilising adaptive strategies of responding to non-verbal communication (Cline & Baldwin, 1998) that could then have reinforced the mutism.

5.3.4. Perceptions of the selectively mute child.

Perceptions of the selectively mute child were positive overall and this contrasts with previous findings of Cline and Baldwin (1998) who found that teachers perceived the child as hostile, obstinate and stubborn. The child's lack of engagement was framed through positive attributes such as politeness and patience.

• "She's got the most patience I've ever seen. How could you not? If someone is elbowing you, she won't tell them to stop... she might shuffle over a little bit but she's very polite." (Participant 12)

On the other hand, participants also reported distinct introverted characteristics of the

selectively mute child such as being shy, timid and afraid. These perceptions echo previous descriptions of selectively mute children as being abnormally timid (Kolvin & Fundudis, 1981). Participant 17 described how the selectively mute child would "freeze" when asked a question and this has been described by Lesser-Katz (1986) who described the function of the "freeze-defence" behaviour as originating in an animal's response to danger.

Additionally, descriptions of the child as anxious were in accordance with Cline and Baldwin's (1998) observations that anxiety and timidity were the most prominent characteristics displayed by selectively mute children. Anxiety has therefore been described as, "the underlying force of the disorder" (Donnelly, 1998, p. 224).

5.3.5. Participants' projections of the selectively mute child's experiences.

Participants' perceptions of the child's experiences ranged from believing that the child was content despite not speaking, or worried and anxious. Teachers' insights into the child's experiences were gained by observing the child's interactions with others, their academic achievements and their non-verbal behaviour such as smiling or looking startled.

5.3.6. Perception of parents.

Perceptions of parents ranged from positive to more negative and these were influenced often by the level of parental involvement; positive parental engagement led to more favourable perceptions of the parents.

5.3.7. Participants' projections of parents' experiences.

Participants' beliefs about parental experiences also ranged from describing very anxious parents to parents who were concerned but supportive and solution-orientated.

5.3.8. Perception of the selectively mute child's sibling.

When participants provided their views of the sibling, they described them in comparison to the selectively mute child. Participants noted similarities in patterns of communication and interaction. For instance, participant 20 had taught the selectively mute child's sibling who had also been mute and this had prepared her for working with the selectively mute child through utilising similar strategies.

5.3.9. Impact on role.

Working with a selectively mute child had a significant impact on the multiple roles which participants felt they had. Some participants stated that they became more approachable and reassuring and almost adopted a supportive role for parents. This contrasts to the 'cycle of blame' relating to causal attributions of teachers and parents reported in studies of children's misbehaviour (Miller, 1995).

Many participants reported that their role encompassed mothering, caring, nurturing and protecting. A reason for this may be that participants were responding to the anxious child who was treating their teacher as an attachment figure in replacement of their parents (Barret & Trevitt, 1991).

Participants also viewed their role as educating, advising and training. Education in this sense

included not only imparting academic knowledge but also skilling the child in valuable life skills such as effective problem-solving. This is in line with Zins et al.'s (2004) position that the purpose of schools is to promote the development of responsible individuals as well as disseminating academic knowledge and skills. It also supports Geddes' (2006) view of the valuable position teachers are in to promote the development of emotional and social skills in preparation for later life due to the long-term nature of their relationships with pupils.

A few participants (N= 8) stated that their experiences of working with the selectively mute child had enabled them to become more aware, skilled and adaptable. These participants would most likely be placed within Watt and Richardson's (2008) category of individuals who had entered the profession with a commitment to a lifetime of teaching. The two participants (three and five) who explicitly set goals and made clear intentions from the outset within a set period of time were successful in ensuring that the child began speaking in school during their work with them. This suggests a link between efficacy beliefs and children's outcomes which is congruent with previous research (Caprara et al., 2006).

Furthermore, participants often viewed their role as investigative and problem solving. They viewed the mutism as a challenge and sought various avenues of information to investigate the child's condition. However, when participants' investigative endeavours were not productive, participants viewed their role as being limited because they experienced a lack of autonomy over their workload and in controlling the child's behaviour to elicit speech.

5.3.10. Perceptions of EP's role.

There were a number of perceptions of the EP's role which related to participants drawing on their own experiences of having EP involvement and their understanding of the EP role. EPs were perceived to facilitate processes such as referrals to other support services in addition to facilitating home-school communication. This is inherent in the practice of EPs and the importance of facilitating processes has been cited as one of the key processes within frameworks to guide practice (e.g., COMOIRA, Gameson, Rhydderch, Ellis & Carroll, 2003, 2005; Gameson & Rhydderch, 2008).

A second perception of the EP related to one of the core functions of the EP role in providing interventions through implementing and modelling them. For example, some participants reported EPs implementing the sliding in technique.

Participants described the EP's role in relation to the work they had observed them implement which included conducting observations, assessments and "diagnoses". For instance, when participant one was asked if the child had any conditions, they responded by saying, "Anxiety. It was diagnosed by the Ed Psych" (Participant 1).

Some participants viewed EPs as having a lack of autonomy over their work because of the EP's work being dictated by the SENCo and provided by the LA.

Participant four perceived she was unable to meet the selectively mute child's needs because of the child's mutism and very low academic abilities without additional classroom support from a TA. The EP's role was perceived as a potential gatekeeper to resources as the participant believed that an EP's report may have helped to gain access to more hours of adult support for the child.

Overall, the EP's role was viewed positively and as providing a valuable service, contrasting Buck's (1987) research reporting that, "The findings of this enquiry indicate that educational psychologists are unable to give teachers support or suggest ideas for dealing with elective mutes" (p. 40).

5.4. Question 1: How Does Working with a Selectively Mute Child Impact on a Teacher's Feelings?

As expected from previous research (Cline & Baldwin, 1998), working with selectively mute children had a powerful effect in terms of generating intense feelings in teachers. These feelings were polarised into positive and negative.

5.4.1. Positive feelings.

A novel emergence from the current study is the reporting of positive feelings stated by teachers working with selectively mute children which had not arisen previously in the literature. Many positive feelings related to the child speaking such as feeling amazed and surprised and also excited, happy and enthusiastic. However, participants also related positive feelings with regard to the small steps in the child's progress including feeling pleased, rewarded and proud when witnessing pre-speech indicators such as the child tolerating a closer distance between themselves and the teacher when speaking to others and increasing physical contact with their teacher such as stroking their arm. When participants witnessed progress towards speech and were successful in eliciting speech, they felt a sense of achievement and relief and also hopeful for the future. However, the key to a positive experience appeared to be not necessarily the child speaking, but rather the child making perceived progress.

Five participants explicitly stated that they felt a sense of warmth towards the child although this was after the child had begun speaking and their comments demonstrated a sense of empathy. Two participants reported that they felt emotions on behalf of the child although, on occasions, this led to a greater level of concern. For example, participant 16 stated, "*Not*

frustrated for myself but for her and worried..." which demonstrated a deep level of empathy supporting previous findings that teachers' work motivations included a sense of altruism (Hayes, 2004; Hoy, 2008).

Two participants reported feeling unconcerned and not worried although these were isolated to cases when the child was of a high academic ability and so the participant thought that the child was still making academic progress.

• "I think the main thing is that it helps that she is more able if it was someone who is less able and couldn't write their answers on the board then that would be really challenging but because she is very able and independent, she knows what to do and how to do it." (Participant 12)

On the other hand, when participants felt worried (as will be described in greater detail) some participants reported feeling supported, with the SENCo usually being the primary source of support.

5.4.2. Negative feelings.

Working with selectively mute children on a full-time basis and in nursery and primary school settings, is an emotionally arousing experience. The novel finding in this case is that, in addition to secondary emotions elicited by primary emotions as found by Cline and Baldwin (1998), tertiary emotions were also generated or co-occurred in some cases. Other negative feelings included feeling challenged, panicked, apprehensive, daunted, pressured & overwhelmed. This finding was unsurprising and supports the challenging feelings experienced by teachers as reported by Cline and Baldwin (1998).

Often when participants reported feeling unsupported, there was an undertone of

helplessness. Some participants cited feeling isolated, especially in cases where they were working with a selectively mute child for the first time, supporting previous findings by Omdal and Galloway (2007). Two participants who felt particularly unsupported and presented as extremely anxious were teachers in the same school who were both working with a selectively mute child at the time of conducting the interviews. Their anxieties were demonstrated by participant 13 attempting to utilise the interview session to gain advice and support on how best to work with the child, asking questions such as "Did you say it is the right thing to do?" and participant 12 stating at the end of the interview that "I'd just like to emphasise that support would be nice". Participant 12 described her frustrations regarding conducting assessments whereby she was required to give the selectively mute child an ability score which she felt did not reflect the child's true abilities because of the lack of verbal measures.

Additional frustrations stemmed from the impact of the selectively mute child's behaviour on other pupils. For instance, participant seven stated that she felt frustrated for the selectively mute child's partner during pair work.

• "Various tasks over two weeks and of course the child that's with him obviously doesn't get much from that relationship so that's frustrating so you have to put them in a three and we have an even number in the class so it just creates chaos. That's probably one of the most frustrating times because you think actually that other child isn't having a learning experience either because they're not speaking so that can be really frustrating." (Participant 7)

Participants also often reported feeling uncertain, unprepared and confused. Kumpulainen et al. (1998) stated that teachers are often confused and reluctant to refer SM children to mental health services because of the lack of overt disruption caused by SM children and the

teacher's expectations that the symptomatic shyness will improve with age. This is demonstrated in the discrepancy between the average age of referral (nine years) and the average age of symptom onset (school entry age) with a potential delay of between 4-6 years before intervention is sought. This has implications for the EP role as it suggests the nature of concerns and the requests for intervention will be more acute and the behaviour will be more entrenched because of the delay in EP involvement.

Some participants reported being unsure of how much pressure they should put on the child to speak which supports previous findings reported by Omdal and Galloway (2007), "Teachers were reported as questioning how much pressure they should be putting on the child to speak" (p. 235).

Additional negative feelings reported by participants included feeling disappointed, sad and upset. Feelings of sadness and upset emanated particularly out of feelings of empathy for the child when they were distressed.

Guilt was a primary emotion and at other times elicited secondary to other emotional processes such as feeling anxious and linked to thoughts surrounding adequacy. Feelings of guilt often emanated from participants' low beliefs in their efficacy and this in turn was reflected in the teacher believing that the student felt self-conscious and was aware of her own academic limitations.

No participants reported feeling hostile towards the child in contrast to previous findings of Cline and Baldwin (1998) who found that teachers perceived the child's silence as a sign of hostility and aggression. Only one participant reported feeling angry and that was towards the mother of the selectively mute child. However, unlike the reports of Cline and Baldwin (1998), this anger did not become self-directed. A reason for this may be that the participant was able to resolve the situation successfully which lead to positive outcomes that included

the selectively mute child speaking.

The most frequently cited negative feelings consisted of feeling frustrated, anxious, worried, concerned and stressed with some evidence of emotional transference as participant two stated, "Had I stressed less maybe she would have picked up on my confidence and not been stressed herself".

5.5. Question 1: How Does Working with a Selectively Mute Child Impact on a Teacher's Behaviours?

5.5.1. Promoted use of child's first language.

Participants who worked with an EAL selectively mute child reported utilising strategies that promoted the use of the child's first language and such strategies have been advocated by guidance on supporting EAL pupils (Ethnic Minority Achievement Support Service, 2004) and the development of a supportive and safe learning environment as recommended by Johnson and Wintgens (2001).

5.5.2. Praise, reward & reinforcement.

Participants reported using verbal praise and reinforcement although as previously stated, this sometimes proved counter-productive. Some participants reported offering rewards and trying to trick the child into speaking which proved unsuccessful, resonating with teachers' experiences reported by Cline and Baldwin (1998), "There might be plans to bribe, trick or trap the child into speaking but without success" (p. 78).

5.5.3. Individualised teaching adaptations.

Individualised teaching adaptations consisted of participants altering their style of teaching and delivery of the curriculum in order to accommodate for the selectively mute child's behaviour. These adaptive strategies which made allowances for the child's behaviour may have served to reinforce the mutism, supporting the arguments of Cline and Baldwin (1998) and Omdal and Galloway (2007). However, other adaptations such as providing the child

with additional thinking time before answering a question, thereby reducing the immediacy of a required response and limiting choices, are both strategies advocated by Johnson and Wintgens (2001) to create the right environment for a selectively mute child to speak.

5.5.4. Promoting non-verbal communication.

Participants not only promoted but also responded to non-verbal responses in order to help the children settle and feel comfortable, supporting Cline and Baldwin's (1998) observation which may have inadvertently helped to maintain the mutism. Such strategies may have also enabled the child to manipulate their learning environment successfully thereby reducing their motivation to use language, supporting Friedman and Karagan's (1973) learning theory explanation of SM.

5.5.5. Intervention programmes and techniques (EEL technique, sliding in technique, transition programme).

Some participants (N= 8) reported having been involved in implementing interventions which have been shown to be effective in promoting speech in selectively mute children such as the sliding in technique (Johnson & Wintgens, 2001). Participants also reported specific sources which were utilised such as rating scales consisting of the stages of competent speaking from 'The Selective Mutism Resource Handbook' (Johnson & Wintgens, 2001).

5.5.6. Utilising or discouraging the use of intermediaries.

There was a range among participants from those who utilised intermediaries to communicate

with the selectively mute child and participants who actively discouraged it. Cline and Baldwin (1998) advocated discouraging the use of intermediaries as they reported the case of a selectively mute child who received greater status for not speaking and had reduced expectations of speech due to other pupils in the class confirming the child's silence, which was also reported in the present research by two participants.

5.5.7. Provided additional resources for child.

The main additional resource provided for selectively mute children, was additional time with a Learning Support Assistant (LSA) or TA. This strategy may have served to reinforce the child's mute behaviour as participants often cited that one of their strategies in supporting the selectively mute child was to provide them with additional adult support with a TA, supporting Omdal and Galloway's (2007) argument that the school context can serve to reinforce the child's mute behaviour.

5.5.8. Utilised transferable skills.

The use of transferable skills from training in other conditions proved extremely effective for some participants. In particular, participants reported the usefulness of applying skills for working with young children who had no language such as babies, with children who had difficulties understanding language such as children with EAL and children with ASD.

5.5.9. Inclusive & uniform, whole-class strategies.

Participants who did not make allowances for the child's mute behaviour attempted to ensure

that the child was engaged within the class and included, which contrasts with Omdal and Galloway's (2007) view of the school's reinforcing role in the maintenance of the child's mute behaviour.

5.5.10. Information seeking.

Participants' information seeking behaviour highlights the initiative and personal agency demonstrated by teachers of selectively mute children which has not been acknowledged in the literature previously. Participants reported active information seeking behaviours through a range of sources such as using search engines on the internet. Yet primarily, participants sought information from their colleagues, particularly SENCos. When information was provided, this was interpreted as supportive and helpful. However, one participant was confused and overwhelmed by the range of advice offered by the staff in the school. This supports Cline and Baldwin's (1998) view that teachers may experience a flood of conflicting advice offered by colleagues. Participants who did not receive any information interpreted this as a lack of support.

5.5.11. Ignoring.

Some participants (N= 4) reported ignoring as a strategy in varying degrees, including avoiding direct eye contact with the child, ignoring the mute behaviour in contexts when speech would be expected or ignoring the child altogether in some situations. This has been described as an ineffective strategy by Cline and Baldwin (1998), "Ignoring their silence has no effect" (p. 77). Two participants described avoiding making direct eye contact with the child which supports the recommendations made by Johnson & Wintgens (2001) as it may

help the child feel less pressurised. Participant 11 also attributed the selectively mute child's reluctance to speak to him as being due to his gender as a male teacher, and is congruent with Johnson & Wintgens' (2001) view that this may be a factor impacting on the selectively mute child's behaviour. This influenced the participant's behaviour by placing less pressure on the child to speak.

5.6. Question 2: Do Teachers' Thoughts, Feelings & Behaviours Change & Develop Over Time?

5.6.1. Development of thoughts.

Cline and Baldwin (1998) argued that teachers and the school can adopt a more distanced attitude towards the child over time when met with failure to resolve the child's mutism. However, the research found there was an increased acceptance of the mutism over time and a re-alignment of priorities emphasising the emotional well-being of the child.

5.6.2. Development of feelings.

Cline and Baldwin (1998) state that over time, teachers become more anxious regarding the ineffectiveness of their efforts to elicit speech from the child. The current research supported this increase in feelings of anxiety in cases when the selectively mute child remained mute, yet additionally found an increase in positivity, confidence and empathy which was often facilitated by feeling supported and having a greater understanding of the condition.

5.6.3. Development of behaviours.

There are little data to describe how teachers' behaviours change over time. However, Cline and Baldwin (1998) state that if efforts to resolve the mutism in school are unsuccessful, then help is often sought through external agencies. The research found this to be the case with teachers having involvement from a range of outside agencies, the most frequently cited being EP and SALT services. Seven factors were found to mediate participants' experiences. These are described in the following sub-sections.

5.7. Question 3: What Mediating Factors Influence the Kinds of Experiences Teachers Have?

5.7.1. Previous experiences of working with a selectively mute child.

The research found that participants drew on their previous experiences of working with EAL and Autstic children and babies in order to work effectively with the selectively mute child as opposed to having specialist training on SM. Previous teaching experiences resulted in teachers feeling more confident.

• "If I'd been a newly qualified teacher with not a lot of experience, I possibly would have struggled." (Participant 16)

One exception was participant five who had previously taught four selectively mute children and felt anxious and confused when the fifth child did not respond as she had expected. This is understandable as selectively mute children are a very heterogenous group. However, her previous experiences of being successful and utilising the same strategies which had proved effective in the past enabled the teacher to ensure a successful outcome as the selectively mute child began speaking during the duration of her work with the child.

The findings also support previous assertions by Omdal and Galloway (2007) that teachers felt more isolated and also in the current study unsure, when they had no previous experience of working with a selectively mute child before.

5.7.2. Attachment levels.

This mediating factor highlighted the importance of language as an avenue for relationship formation. Attachments were formed more easily when the child spoke or demonstrated

intentions to speak and support was found for the prediction that teachers' feelings could be mediated by the levels of attachment they formed with the child; the greater the positive affect shown towards the teacher, the more positive the teacher felt. Participant two described herself as being like a mother to the selectively mute child and this may have been a response to the anxious child transferring the role of specific attachment figure onto his teacher as described in previous literature (Barret & Trevitt, 1991).

5.7.3. Access to training & support.

No participants reported having training on how to effectively work with selectively mute children although one participant reported receiving training materials as a secondary source from the SENCo. Other participants reported utilising transferable strategies gained from training on other conditions such as ASD. Also, Hargreaves' (1978) statement that, "Offering to help a colleague implies that they are incompetent" (p. 132) was not supported as participants who received advice and support from colleagues, with the exception of participant 2, felt more competent as a result.

Participants who had some access to training such as advice and literature from the SENCo and who felt supported, reported feeling less anxious and unsure. They were also more positive about the future and their role in supporting the selectively mute child.

5.7.4. Levels of parental engagement.

Levels of parental engagement mediated participants' experiences through increasing anxiety levels when parents were perceived as being avoidant, unengaged or exacerbatory. However, participants reported feeling more positive and supported when parents engaged positively.

5.7.5. Levels of child engagement.

As anticipated, the participants reported a range of engagement and interaction levels exhibited by the selectively mute children and this information was valuable in understanding the nature of teacher-pupil interactions. As Salzberger-Wittenberg et al. (1983) state, teacher-pupil interactions are "suffused with meaning". A tentative new finding was the link in one case between physical contact and proximity to attachment being an indicator of pre-speech. Participant 14 described the selectively mute child touching her arm initially then stroking her back before beginning to speak in her presence. Therefore, as the child's attachment to the teacher grew, the child sought to reduce the physical proximity between the teacher and herself.

5.7.6. Context.

Context was found to play a significant mediating role in influencing the nature of participants' experiences. It has been argued that primary teachers are in an advantageous position for forming relationships that could provide corrective experiences for pupils due to having fewer students and for extended periods of time as opposed to shorter periods in secondary schools (Riley, 2011). This may be more so for nursery and reception years which are characterised by high staff to pupil ratios and more parental contact as exemplified by participant three's account.

• "Also because he was a new child that had started half way through the term because of the whole settling in procedure we had a lot more talking to parents but you also find that in Reception anyway. You have more conversations with parents because they have that gradual time to come in and sit with the child in class." (Participant 3)

5.8. Research Limitations

There are several limitations of the study such as weaknesses of the design relating to the interview schedule. This included the limited flexibility in adapting the interview to specific individuals and situations. The standardisation of the interview questions could have limited the naturalness of the interview process due to its inflexibility. However, it may be argued that standardised questions had the advantage of keeping interviews focused on particular themes and therefore increasing the depth of the data relating to those themes.

Some participants struggled with accessing the language of some questions. This was demonstrated by teachers not answering the question, silences, pauses, asking for clarification and through non-verbal cues such as facial expressions. Silverman (1993) highlights the importance of ensuring that questions are understood in the same way by all interviewees. Therefore, reliability could be increased by revising the content of the questions within the interview schedule to ensure the language contained is accessible to all participants. In addition, it may be that using academic language of 'pedagogy' may have resulted in participants interpreting one question as a knowledge question which Patton (1990) states can be threatening.

It may also be argued that the interview could have been more natural if there were less questions within the interview schedule, enabling participants to provide an even richer account of their experiences if they had less interruptions. However, Kvale (1996) stated that one of the criteria for an ideal interview is that respondent's answers should be longer than the interviewer's questions and this was found in all of the questions which participants answered.

There were also potential observer effects as three interviews were conducted in the school staffroom with other staff present and this may have impacted on the depth of information

that participants were willing to express. It may have impacted on the naturalness of the interview due to the obtrusiveness of casual observers. Also, during the interview with participant four, a member of support staff who had an interest in SM joined the interview after 10 minutes of it beginning. The participant gave their consent but this observer effect may have impacted on the degree of honesty with which the teacher subsequently answered the questions. On reflection, it would have been appropriate for the interviewer to decline the request in order to ensure a degree of uniformity in the interview circumstances.

It was difficult sometimes for the interview not to turn into a consultation or therapy session. For instance, participant 13 was very eager to gain some advice regarding strategies to use for the selectively mute child she was teaching at the time asking questions such as, "Is that the right thing to do?" It was a challenge to redirect the teacher back to the interview questions. To resolve this ethical dilemma, the researcher deferred providing advice and strategies until the end of the interview session. Also, participant 12 was in a school which had an extremely stressful climate and went on to fail an Office for Standards in Education, Children's Services and Skills (Ofsted) inspection a few months later. The participant felt unsupported and stated at the end of the interview that support would have been nice. It was felt that any prompting would have led the participant to have a cathartic release of discussing problems which were not necessarily relevant to the research, so the researcher had to try and manage the participant's emotions by not providing her with opportunities to expand on her experiences of feeling unsupported through providing some emotional containment (Bion, 1967).

Also, the nil response rate for the diary study limits the inferences which can be made regarding the change and development of thoughts and feelings over time during the duration of the work with the selectively mute child. The response rate for the diary study may have been increased if the diary schedule was completed by the researcher in the format of a telephone interview. However, it appeared that the low response rate was due to the pressures

of time commitment and therefore the telephone interview method may have presented the same challenges for staff. In addition, setting up interview times may prove more problematic than the autonomy provided by the electronic diary method which was more flexible in enabling the teacher to complete the schedule at a time convenient for them on an allocated day. For instance, if the participant requested to be called on a weekend, this may prove more difficult as Cohen, Manion and Morrison (2000) state that response rates are lower at weekends.

Finally, the research could have been improved by decreasing the time between the interview process and when the participant had worked with a selectively mute child from four years to the previous year. This would have decreased the sample size but may have resulted in more accurate recollections. For instance, Participant 15 had some difficulties with recollecting past experiences, "...like I say we're going back two years now, perhaps it would have been better to speak to last year's teacher..." therefore it may have been beneficial to only interview teachers who were teaching selectively mute children at the time.

As a result of the aforementioned limitations some recommendations are made in the conclusion section. There were also several strengths of the research and these are listed next.

5.9. Research Strengths

There were several strengths of the research design such as the high comparability of responses due to the uniformity of questioning content and order, providing complete sets of data for each participant within the interview topics and facilitating the organisation and analysis of the data.

It proved useful and more informative to categorise the term experience within the concepts

of thoughts, feelings and behaviours as it enabled a more detailed exploration of these components of experience and all comments or reflections could be categorised within the three concepts. However, the challenge arose when comments which were coded could overlap within the three concepts. This suggests that thoughts, feelings and behaviours are strongly interconnected so categorisation could be viewed as a convenient way to display the data and as a guide for a richer exploration within the field, but there remains a need to acknowledge that there is an intimate relationship between the concepts.

The interview process itself produced new insights and awareness for some participants, sometimes enabling them to adapt their descriptions and meanings about certain themes, such as participant five on reflection perceiving that the selectively mute child was in control of his mute behaviour. Therefore, a change took place simply as a result of the interview process which was advantageous to the participant, supporting Kvale's (1996) observations of the main characteristics of qualitative research interviews. It may also be argued that the interview process was a generally positive experience for most participants.

The researcher will now reflect on her subjective involvement in the research process within the following section.

5.10. Researcher's Reflective & Reflexive Thoughts

My employment history was connected to my research interest; the route taken to arrive at the topic arose from my previous experiences of working as a teacher with a selectively mute child. Therefore, my perspective was that it can be a very emotional experience; one that can be very rewarding and simultaneously elicit feelings of guilt and frustration. My previous teaching experiences, assumptions of the role and preconceptions may have influenced my analysis of the data through making inferences from the data that were based on my own experiences. I believe imposing some structure to

the themes in relation to thoughts, feelings and behaviours was useful in organising the data but may have constrained both the analysis and interpretation of the data. This may have led to over-interpreting the emotional aspects of working with a selectively mute child and making some misinterpretations such as coding a teacher avoiding eye contact as an ignoring strategy as opposed to coding it as an effective strategy reflected by a teacher's sensitivity to the needs of a selectively mute child. Coding the data was a difficult process due to the volume of data and the novelty of working with words as opposed to number data but it may have been useful to re-interview participants following data analysis to check my interpretations of the data with them.

Reflecting on the interactive process between myself and the respondents, my interviewing style may have affected the manner in which the participant reflected on their experiences. For instance, it may have been that I did not allow enough thinking time for participants in order to enable them to reflect in more detail on their experiences due to experiencing mild anxiety between getting through all of the research questions and ensuring that the interviews were not too long so that participants did not become fatigued by the end of the interview session. It is believed that the proposed amendment to future research to reduce the number of questions within the interview schedule would enable participants to expand more on their answers.

I also believe that the research process developed my communication and interpersonal skills and conducting the interviews with teachers was my favourite part of the research. Although conducting the research was very time-consuming (particularly the transcription phase) and demanding in many ways, it has reaffirmed my belief in the value of research for developing both personal and professional skills. Conducting this research has made me appreciate the role of the researcher for creating dynamics within the interview setting that elicit authentic, good quality data and I believe that my interview skills developed and improved over time.

Overall, I believe this research is partly a reflection of my status as a novice researcher of qualitative methodology and the challenges of learning a new method of analysis. I found the process of engaging in qualitative research challenging as the majority of my research experience had been

conducting quantitative research and my conscious incompetence was somewhat anxiety provoking. However, I found the qualitative approach very interesting and conducting the research has developed my interest in qualitative methodology. I would like to conduct further research using this methodology in the future if such opportunities arise.

5.11. Chapter Summary

Chapter five has discussed the findings of the study and critically evaluated them with reference to previous theory and research. It highlighted the limitations of the study and suggested potential resolutions as well as drawing attention to the strengths of the study. It also provided the researcher's reflexive and reflective account of the research process.

The final chapter summarises the aims of the study and makes recommendations for future research. It also considers the practical implications of the study for the profession and practice of educational psychology, psychology and education.

6. Conclusions

6.1. Chapter Summary

This chapter summarises the findings of the current research and how it relates to the relevant theory and research. Recommendations for further research are made and the theoretical and practical implications of the research are discussed particularly regarding the implications for the field of psychology, the field of education and the profession and practice of educational psychology.

6.2. Relevance of Theory

The present research found evidence to support the link between SM and social anxiety.

In particular, the research has extended previous findings related to teachers' thoughts; the impact of expectations such that expectations of speech impacted on teaching practices through promoting the use of proactive strategies to encourage the child to engage and communicate. Other findings pertaining to teacher's thoughts are:

- The association reported between social anxiety as descriptions of the selectively mute children and SM supporting the same association highlighted by Manassis et al. (2007).
- 2. The emergence of positive experiences and perceptions of the selectively mute children previously unreported in the SM literature.
- 3. Over time, teachers had a greater acceptance of the mute behaviour and on occasions re-prioritised their aims.

Regarding feelings, the main theories and research cited by Cline & Baldwin (1998), Buck

(1987) and Edmondson (1986) suggesting that working with selectively mute children was a stressful experience were supported by the current research. There was also an emergence of negative primary emotions that generated secondary and tertiary emotions. Yet, teachers also reported having positive feelings from their experiences of working with a selectively mute child not reported in previous literature. It also emerged that selectively mute children were less likely to be referred for a specialist assessment due to the lack of overt disruption they caused and that teachers used transferable skills from their experiences of working with other children such as babies, EAL children and children with Autism.

Furthermore, potential mediating factors on participants' experiences were identified including:

- Previous experiences of working with a selectively mute child which in this instance increased teacher's confidence during their work.
- 2. Access to training and support need to be taken into account for increasing teachers' confidence and problem-solving skills although teacher training was not reported as useful for preparing teachers to work with a selectively mute child.
- 3. Levels of parental engagement with negative engagement styles as defined by teachers increasing teachers' anxiety levels and the converse being true for parents who engaged positively.
- 4. Levels of pupil engagement again identified by teachers which when positive resulted in teachers reporting more positive experiences were important factors that need to be considered. A novel finding (in one instance) was also the relatedness between physical contact and speech where the selectively mute child initiated physical contact with her teacher prior to beginning to verbalise.
- 5. Contextual factors need to be thought about and how they influence the development of teacher-pupil attachments through adopting more nurturing approaches in early

years settings. Most importantly, the research highlighted the school context as key to reinforcing or ameliorating mutism.

6.3. Further Research

An extension of the current study could explore additional factors which may have mediated participants' experiences that have not been explored. These included ethnicity, birth order, co-morbidity of conditions, gender of the child or teacher and the child's academic ability. Further research could explore these potential mediating factors. For instance, the research suggested that teachers had a less stressful experience when the child was more academically able as they felt reassured the child was still accessing the curriculum, but participants were also equally more frustrated when assessing the child because they often felt that the results did not reflect the child's true ability because of the omission of the verbal component of assessments.

A second extension would be to conduct a diary study with reports collected monthly as opposed to fortnightly as attempted in the current study. This may increase the response rate and the validity of the study by measuring the changing and dynamic nature of thoughts, emotions and behaviours. Lincoln and Guba (1985) state that an approach consisting of persistent observation and prolonged engagement in the research area would increase the credibility of the findings. Also, ensuring stability of observations through participants regularly tracking their experiences would have increased the reliability of the data, as recommended by Denzin and Lincoln (1994). This would have also protected the contamination of memories and possible reconstruction of events which has been a criticism of retrospective accounts (Loftus, 1977, 1979a; Loftus & Palmer, 1974). However, interviewing teachers who had previously taught a selectively mute child may have been

more advantageous as teachers had had time to reflect on their experiences.

Another extension may have included videoing the interviews in order to capture the social encounter more effectively by incorporating the visual and non-verbal features of the interview. Yet, videotaping participants may have greatly constrained the interview process due its connotation of surveillance (Cohen, Manion & Morrison, 2000) and the data analysis would have been much more time consuming.

A further extension of the study could include widening the sample to secondary school teachers as research has highlighted the importance of context in research on teaching (Hoy, 2008). Cline and Baldwin (1998) stated that infant teachers are particularly patient in waiting for children to settle into school. With the inference that primary teachers may be less patient than infant teachers, one may question what impact the patience level of secondary teachers would have on the behaviour and feelings of selectively mute children and young people.

Further research could include interviewing the parents of children with SM in order to investigate other mediating factors on teachers' experiences such as extreme shyness or anxiety in the family history which had been found to be more likely in families of children with SM (Dow, Sonies, Scjeob, Moss & Leonard, 1995). For instance, parents of selectively mute children could provide greater insights into their children's anxiety levels. Cunningham, McHolm, Boyle and Patel (2004) found parents, as well as teachers, reported that selectively mute children were overall more anxious than the matched control group. Therefore, it may be useful to interview selectively mute children, and this has been successfully achieved in previous research by using the Raven's Controlled Projection for Children (RCPC), enabling children to communicate in writing or on a computer (Omdal & Galloway, 2007). Also, it may have been useful to interview TAs who had spent a significant amount of time with the child.

In order to assess teachers' behaviour more effectively, it may be more objective to conduct behavioural observations and recording, for instance, the frequency and nature of non-verbal interactions.

6.4. Practical Implications

There are many potential practical implications of the current research and these are drawn from the researcher's interpretation of the data and from practical recommendations made by participants. These are listed under the following sub-headings.

6.4.1. Implications for psychology.

6.4.1.1. Further research.

The current research provides further insight into SM particularly with regard to the contributing factors that give rise to the condition. Such insights were provided through participants' hypotheses of why the child was mute identifying variables associated with the condition such as shyness and anxiety. The current research appears to parallel the factors that previous research has identified to be associated with SM. However, what remains less well understood are the relationships between these variables and how one may be mediating another; the subtle connections between the variables remain to be clarified. For instance, parental conflict or adverse family circumstances may lead to poorer self-esteem and this in turn to SM becoming more entrenched. It would be interesting for future research to explore how these variables may relate to and interact with each other; whether one is mediated by the other or if one is more influential than the other. The findings of such research would assist in generating more powerful theoretical explanations to make better predictions of what

would be effective for working with a selectively mute child and thereby deliver better interventions.

The psychological field would benefit from further research on the impact of SM on the lives of the key individuals involved including the selectively mute child, their parents and TAs. Studies could interview parents and provide questionnaires for selectively mute children to overcome the mute behaviour or alternatively conduct interviews in a context in which the child spoke, such as their home. This would serve to triangulate the data and therefore increase reliability and overcome some of the criticisms cited by previous studies that there is little concordance between the anxiety ratings of selectively mute children and those ascribed by key adults involved in the selectively mute child's life (Omdal & Galloway, 2007; Yeganeh et al., 2003).

6.4.2. Implications for education.

6.4.2.1. Establishing a support network for teachers.

Two participants recommended establishing a support network either virtually through an online support system to access as a form of social support and educational forum or physically.

• "Some sort of centralised community or LEA based..." (Participant 20)

However, Hoy (2008) asks the question, "Could teacher education prepare its graduates to self-regulate their own social support networks?" (p. 496). EPs may have an important role in equipping teachers to self-regulate their emotions in order to ensure their emotional well-being, especially when feeling isolated in the school context. Hoy's (2008) question could be answered by ensuring that teacher training includes the teaching of social networking skills in

addition to academic and pedagogical knowledge which has proved insufficient to prevent teacher attrition (Hoy, 2008).

6.4.2.2. Initial teacher training & CPD.

SM is a rare condition and therefore it is not necessarily advocated that the curriculum of initial teacher training programmes include teaching on the condition. However, it would prove beneficial if such programmes included more information on Special Educational Needs, children's emotional needs and most importantly, the transferable skills which teachers could utilise when working with children who have a range of special educational needs. This was one recommendation by participant 4.

• "I think all teachers should have had more training in special needs and speech and language because it holds so many other things up and regardless of whether you have a selective mute in your class actually there's a lot of children who need to learn the skills of how to communicate so that would be useful..." (Participant 4)

6.4.2.3. Outcomes for children.

It is hypothesised that through implementing the aforementioned recommendations, this would lead to improved outcomes for teachers such as being more skilled and feeling more supported which would ultimately lead to better outcomes for children.

6.4.3. Implications for the profession & practice of educational psychology.

Overall, participants who had involvement from an EP experienced them making a positive

contribution. For instance, participant six reported that the EP, "did a great job". However, there are several recommendations for EP practice, the majority of which were recommended by participants and are listed below.

6.4.3.1. Providing training.

Training could incorporate providing information on the condition of SM including causal explanations and giving practical advice and strategies such as utilising non-verbal assessment tools. The findings demonstrate that teachers were already utilising many of the formal recommendations made for creating the right environment for selectively mute children (Johnson & Wintgens, 2001), such as avoiding direct eye contact, restricting options to assist with decision making and providing opportunities for group work. Yet formalising these strategies by committing them to policy and reflecting back to teachers their good practice would most likely lead to greater confidence, competence and motivation and as Malmberg (2008) found, motivation correspondingly increases as a sense of competency increases.

Also, Shreeve (1999) stated that, "the most intense communication may occur in moments of total silence" (p. 135) and teachers can be trained to seek information from non-verbal sources. EPs can make a valuable contribution to the retention and resilience of teachers by providing advice and training:

- "I think we need a whole staff inset without the children there about activities..."

 (Participant 19)
- "I think they [EPs] could provide some very clear dos and don'ts from a psychological perspective." (Participant 7)

More specifically, training as part of teacher CPD events, could incorporate vicarious experiences as these have been found to have an impact on teacher's self-beliefs within their professional roles, responsibilities and efficacy (Tschannen-Moran & Woolfolk Hoy, 2007). Also, training could serve to equip teachers with emotional regulation skills to effectively manage stress as research has demonstrated that teachers who lacked such skills were more likely to experience exhaustion and burnout (Kieschke & Schaarschmidt, 2008).

However, research has demonstrated that the most effective source of increasing self-efficacy is through 'mastery' experiences (Bandura, 1997; Tschannen-Moran & McMaster, 2009). Yet SM is a rare condition and therefore it is unlikely that teachers would have the opportunity to practice skills and simulating mutism during a professional training event may have limited credibility. Therefore, it is recommended that training should incorporate detailed information on the stages of competent speaking which can be presented as checklists such as those created by Johnson and Wintgens within the Selective Mutism Resource Manual (2001). It is anticipated that by breaking down the steps to fluent speech and recognising the small achievements, teachers can then experience a sense of reward and mastery.

EPs could also conduct teacher observations and provide feedback (as requested by participant 1), supporting Noell's (2008) suggestion that EPs have a role to play in assisting teachers with providing valuable feedback following the implementation of new interventions.

It would also be highly beneficial to include training for TAs (as recommended by participant 1).

• "...again for TAs as well because often they are the people who work most closely with the children." (Participant 1)

6.4.3.2. Contributing to initial teacher training programmes.

EPs could contribute to initial teacher training programmes in order to equip teachers with skills including effective conflict resolution and problem-solving. This may serve to increase teachers' resilience, increase retention and reduce attrition rates in the profession.

6.4.3.3. Increasing accessibility to EPs.

As previously stated, involvement from educational psychology services was highly valued by service users although participants recommended increasing accessibility to EPs. This could be achieved through increasing the ease of communication with EPs such as providing an email address (as recommended by participant 10) or through telephone consultations (as provided by Hampshire EPS).

6.4.3.4. Providing support & reassurance.

EPs could provide support and reassurance to teachers, particularly those who are earlier in their careers and who are more likely to leave the profession, than teachers who are more established in their career and closer to retirement age (Ingersoll & Smith, 2003). Jordan and Stanovich (2003) have reported that applied psychologists are a valuable resource for teacher support. In particular, EPs could promote teachers' self-efficacy which has been argued as a personal resource factor to reduce the likelihood of teacher stress escalating to burnout (Schwarzer & Hallam, 2008). Gibbs (2012) have argued that an understanding of teachers' attributions and efficacy beliefs are the foundations for applied psychologists to support teachers.

Providing support can be achieved through applying an intervention programme, utilising a consultation approach, and the many person-centred skills that EPs possess such as positive reframing.

• "...somebody who's approachable who can be reassuring is probably the best thing and who can give you ideas because I know from talking to her mum that they tend to go in peaks and troughs about it." (Participant 14)

EPs are also in an excellent position to provide professional support to teachers through formal supervision. Most EP training courses promote self-reflective skills and EPs could promote the utilisation of these skills within supervision sessions with teachers. The current study demonstrated the value of providing teachers with the time to review cases and discuss experiences as demonstrated by participant five reconstructing her experiences when recounting her work with the selectively mute child. The element of social interaction and the subsequent dialogue elicited were central to creating meaning from the experience.

Additionally, EPs can facilitate teachers in seeking support through a systemic approach by promoting a sense of collective efficacy within the school and can utilise staffroom culture by modelling problem-solving groups such as circle of adults (Newton, 1995).

EPs could also facilitate home-school links as a means of supporting teachers. The research proposes that parental support can act as a mediator for job stress and burnout.

6.4.3.5. Reflecting, reframing & reconstructing.

EPs could promote the skills of reframing events as advocated by the COMOIRA model (Gameson, Rhydderch, Ellis & Carroll, 2003, 2005; Gameson & Rhydderch, 2008) in order to reduce teachers' anxiety and frustration and to enable them to draw on their skills by

establishing what they had been successful at previously. For example, participant four positively reframed the situation by changing her attitudes to look at the child's strengths and celebrate his achievements.

• "I'd seen him go through school and everyone kept saying his name and saying "xxx's not talking". Well take that away, he's doing everything else so let's just go with what he's doing. For me it was let's work with what's good and we'll manage."

(Participant 4)

Also, through the process of reflection, teachers may become more aware of some of the factors that may be maintaining the mutism such as unconscious reinforcement of the mute behaviour, exemplified in participant six's strategy to facilitate task avoidance.

• "The only time it did impact was when I was doing speaking and listening tasks where she wouldn't want to perform anything and so I had to make sure that I grouped her carefully and made it clear that she was doing a part where she wouldn't have to speak." (Participant 6)

6.4.3.6. Increasing time allocation to schools & greater autonomy over workload.

Many participants requested additional EP time which seems reasonable as the most usual course of action in dealing with cases of SM, is that once the teacher is sufficiently concerned, the school's SENCo is contacted and steps are undertaken within the DfES Code of Practice framework on Special Educational Needs including seeking additional information through a consultation process.

• "I suppose it would be the frequency that they could come into school and help but financial constraints and the impact upon that rather than it being something that the Increasing EPs' time in schools would ensure sufficient time is allocated to staff consultation in order to ensure that planned interventions are practical in a classroom setting. It would also enable EPs to be more involved in implementing the many recommendations made by the participants in this study such as providing therapeutic approaches. It is recommended that EPs become more engaged in delivering therapeutic approaches to ensure EPs maintain their skill set which would otherwise atrophy if not utilised and to avoid the profession being marginalised (Boyle & Lauchlan, 2009; Mackay, 2007, 2009). Therapeutic approaches which aim to reduce anxiety are particularly recommended as these have been proven to have the most successful outcomes (Cohan, Price & Stein, 2006a) and research suggests that Cognitive Behaviour Therapy (CBT) is the most effective therapy (Cohan et al., 2006a; Ishikawa, Okajima, Matsuoka & Sakano, 2007). However, it is recognised that intensive interventions require a substantial time commitment which can prove costly. Therefore, an avenue for input may be through EPs becoming actively involved in delivering services through the Targeted Mental Health in Schools Project (TaMHS, DfE, 2008).

Black & Uhde (1995) highlighted the school environment as the most common context in which children fail to speak and therefore, it follows, that the most effective interventions would be within a school setting. Therefore, it may be argued, that EPs are uniquely placed to implement effective interventions and facilitate information sharing as a result of their ability to access the relevant contexts and work at the individual, group and organisational levels to promote positive change.

However, when administering such interventions, it is worthwhile for EPs to be self aware of the impact the child's mutism may have on the therapeutic process and on their own self-esteem. Ruzicka and Sackin (1974) proposed that the child's silence may be interpreted as an

insult to a therapist's self-esteem. Also, such work may require the EP to practice in more flexible and innovative ways such as enabling the child to communicate through play or drawing which has been a successful documented strategy (Anthony, 1997). However, in the aforementioned strategy, it took four months before the child began speaking to the therapist and this is a significant consideration if EPs commit to undertaking individual casework, particularly in a climate where services are increasingly being provided on a "buy back" or traded model and in such a climate it would possibly be unlikely that schools would invest the considerable costs which would undoubtedly be required.

It is further recommended that EPs engage in more work to reduce teachers' anxiety in addition to the parent training and support programmes suggested within previous literature (Yeganeh et al., 2003), as developing skills to cope with emotions such as anxiety have been shown to reduce teachers' levels of stress (Zins et al., 2004). This does not have to be through a manualised therapeutic approach but could be achieved through consultation (Wagner, 2000), as it has been stated that growth brings acquaintance with limitations (Shreeve, 1999). EPs are well placed to support the selectively mute child and all those involved in their lives to reduce the anxieties that arise from conscious incompetence and to facilitate the growth and development of all those concerned.

EPs could also be involved in implementing and overseeing transition programmes. This could be achieved by creating a specialist EP role as has been the case in some LAs. Many participants viewed the reasons for the child's mute behaviour as due to their traumatic transition into school. They recounted incidents of the child being distressed, inconsolable and seemingly unable to cope with the demands of the school context. EPs could contribute to ameliorating this difficulty by becoming more involved in transition programmes for supporting children entering school, as this is the age of highest prevalence of selectively mute children (Imich, 1998), and in the transition from primary to secondary school.

6.5. Summary

The current research has contributed towards an increased understanding of teachers' experiences working with selectively mute children in relation to their thoughts, feelings and behaviours as components of their experiences. It described teachers' attributions and efficacy beliefs which led to reflections and recommendations about how to support and contribute to the emotional well-being of teachers who are working with selectively mute children. The research also contributes to the field by documenting successful incidents of eliciting speech and the previously unreported positive emotions derived from working with selectively mute children.

The research suggests that working with selectively mute children is an emotionally arousing experience and the most frequently cited emotions are frustration and concern. These emotions require acknowledgment of their impact on influencing thoughts and behaviours within the classroom. Teachers have a very significant and powerful role in children's lives. It is hoped that the present research will contribute to the body of knowledge about what would be of use to practitioners.

A final reflection is made on the importance of collaborative working between the selectively mute child's parents and teachers and the role of the EP in facilitating this. As Bowlby states, "a society which values its children must cherish their parents" and in additional concurrence with Geddes (2006), one would argue, their teachers.

References

American Psychiatric Association. (1994). *Diagnostic and Statistical Manual of Mental Disorders*, 4th edition. (DSM-IV). Washington: American Psychiatric Association.

Anderson, R. (2007). Thematic Content Analysis (TCA). Descriptive presentation of qualitative data. Retrieved from:

http://www.wellknowingconsulting.org/publications/pdfs/ThematicContentAnalysis.pdf

Anstendig, K. (1998). Selective mutism: A review of the treatment literature by modality from 1980-1996. *Psychotherapy*, *35*(*3*), 381-391.

Anthony, E. J. (1977). Nonverbal and verbal systems of communication. *Psychoanalytic Study of the Child*, *32*, 307-325.

Antoynatan, T. H. (1986). Elective mutism: Involvement of the mother in the treatment of the child. *Child Psychiatry & Human Development*, 17, 15-27.

Arthur, M., Gordon, C., & Butterfield, N. (2003). Classroom Management: Creating Positive

Learning Environments. Australia: Thomson.

Aronson, J. (1994). A pragmatic view of thematic analysis. *The Qualitative Report*, 2(1), 1-3.

Baldwin, S. (1985). No silence please. Times Educational Supplement, 8 November, p.25.

Bandura, A. (1977). Social Learning Theory. Englewood Cliffs, NJ: Prentice Hall.

Bandura, A. (1997). Self-Efficacy: The Exercise of Control. New York: Freeman.

Barrett, M., & Trevitt, J. (1991). *Attachment Behaviour and the Schoolchild*. London: Routledge.

Bekerian, D. A., & Bowers, J. M. (1983). Eyewitness testimony: Were we misled? *Journal of Experimental Psychology: Learning, Memory & Cognition*, 9, 139-145.

Bergman, L, R., Piacentini, J., & McCracken, J. T. (2002). Prevalence and description of Selective Mutism in a school-based sample. *Journal of the American Academy of Child & Adolescent Psychiatry*, 41(8), 72-83.

- Bion, W. (1967). A Theory of Thinking in Second Thoughts: Selected Papers on Psychoanalysis. London: Karnac.
- Black, B., & Uhde, T. W. (1995). Psychiatric characteristics of children with Selective

 Mutism: A pilot study. *Journal of the American Academy of Child & Adolescent*Psychiatry, 34(7), 847-856.
- Blotcky, M. J., & Looney, J. G. (1980). A psychotherapeutic approach to silent children. *American Journal of Psychotherapy*, 24(4), 487-495.
- Boyatzis, R. E. (1998). Transforming Qualitative Information: Thematic Analysis and Code

 Development. London: Sage Publications.
- Boyle, C., & Lauchlan, F. (2009). Applied psychology and the case for individual casework:

 Some reflections on the role of the educational psychologist. *Educational Psychology*in Practice, 25(1), 71-84.
- Bradley, S., & Sloman, L. (1975). Elective Mutism in immigrant families. *Journal of the American Academy of Child & Adolescent Psychiatry*, 14(3), 510-514.

- Braun, V., & Clarke, V. (2006). Using thematic analysis in psychology. *Qualitative Research* in *Psychology*, *3*, 77-101.
- Brown, J., & Lloyd, H. (1975). A controlled study of not speaking in school. *Journal of Associated Workers of Maladjusted Children*, *3*, 49–63.
- Buck, M. (1987). *An Investigation into Elective Mutism*. Bachelor of Education thesis, Brighton Polytechnic, UK.
- Businessballs. Conscious competence learning model. Retrieved December 2, 2010, from: http://www.businessballs.com/consciouscompetencelarningmodel.htm
- Caprara, G. V., Barbaranelli, C., Steca, P., & Malone, P. S. (2006). Teachers' self-efficacy beliefs as determinants of job satisfaction and students' academic achievement: A study at the school level. *Journal of School Psychology*, 44(6), 473-490.
- Cassell, J. (1988). The relationship of observer to observed when studying up. *Studies in Qualitative Methodology*, 1, 89-108.

- Chavira, D.A., Shipon-Blum, E., Hitchcock, C., Cohan, S., & Stein, M. B. (2007). *Journal of the American Academy of Child & Adolescent Psychiatry*, 46(11), 1464–1473.
- Christiaansen, R. E., & Ochalek, K. (1983). Editing misleading information from memory:

 Evidence for the coexistence of original and postevent information. *Memory & Cognition*, 11, 73-86.
- Clark, D. M. (2011). Implementing NICE guidelines for the psychological treatment of depression and anxiety disorders: The IAPT experience. *International Review of Psychiatry*, 23, 375–384.
- Cleave, H. (2009). Too anxious to speak? The implications of current research into Selective Mutism for educational psychology practice. *Educational Psychology in Practice*, 25(3), 233-246.
- Clemente, J., Brafman, M., & Cohen, C. H. (1986). Concurrent treatment of mother and child resolution of mutigenerational separation and individuation difficulties. *Journal of Contemporary Psychotherapy*, 16(2), 140-150.
- Cline, T., & Baldwin, S. (1998). Selective Mutism in Children. Studies in Disorders

of Communication. London: Whurr Publishers Ltd.

Clunies-Ross, P., Little, E., & Kienthuis M. (2008). Self-reported and actual use of proactive and reactive classroom management strategies and their relationship with teacher stress and student behaviour. *Educational Psychology*, 28(6), 693-710.

Cohan, S. L., Chavira, D. A., Shipon-Blum, E., Hitchcock, C., Roesch, S. C. & Stein, M. B. (2008). Refining the classification of children with selective mutism: A latent profile analysis. *Journal of Clinical Child & Adolescent Psychology*, *37*(4), 770-84.

Cohen, L., Manion, L., & Morrison, K. (2000). *Research Methods in Education*. Routledge: London.

Cohan, S.L., Price, J. M., & Stein, M. B. (2006a). Suffering in silence: Why a developmental psychopathology perspective on Selective Mutism is needed. *Journal of Developmental Pediatrics*, 27(4), 341–355.

Conduct Problems Prevention Research Group. (1999). FAST Track Update. Rockville, MD:

National Institute of Mental Health.

Crozier, W. R. (2002). Shyness. *The Psychologist*, 15(9), 469-463.

Crumley, F. (1990). The masquerade of mutism. *Journal of the American Academy of Child*& Adolescent Psychiatry, 29, 318-319.

Cunningham, C. E., McHolm, A., Boyle, M. H., Patel, S. (2004). Behavioral and emotional adjustment, family functioning, academic performance, and social relationships in children with Selective Mutism. *Journal of Child Psychology & Psychiatry*, 45(8), 363-1372.

De Koster, K., Devise, I., Flament, I., & Loots, G. (2004). Two practices, one perspective, many constructs: On the implications of social constructionism on scientific research and therapy. *Brief Strategic & Systemic Theory European Review, 1*, 74-80.

Denzin, N. K., & Lincoln, Y. S. (1994). *Handbook of Qualitative Research*. Thousand Oaks, California: Sage Publications.

Department for Education and Science. (1988). Education Reform Act. London: HMSO.

Department for Education. (2010). SFR 11/2010: School Workforce in England (including pupil: teacher ratios and pupil: adult ratios) (SFR 11/2010). London: Department for Education. Retrieved from:

http://www.education.gov.uk/rsgateway/DB/SFR/s000844/index.shtml

Department for Education and Skills. (2005). Focusing on Solutions: A Positive Approach to Improving Behaviour. London: HMSO.

Department for Education. (2008). *Targeted Mental Health in Schools*. London: Department for Education. Retrieved from:

https://www.education.gov.uk/publications/eOrderingDownload/00784-2008BKT-EN.pdf

Donnelly, C. L. (1998). Anxiety disorders in childhood and adolescence. In Klykylo, W. M., Kay, J., & Rube, D. (Ed.), *Clinical Child Psychiatry* (pp. 205-229). Philadelphia: WB Saunders.

Dow, S. P., Sonies, B. C., Scjeob, D., Moss, S. E., & Leonard, H. L. (1995). Practical guidelines for the assessment and treatment of Selective Mutism. *Journal of the American Academy of Child & Adolescent Psychiatry*, 34(7), 836-846.

Dummit, E. S., Kelin, R. G., Tancer, N. K., Asche, B., & Fairbanks, J. A. (1997).

Systematic assessment of 50 children with Selective Mutism. *Journal of the American Academy of Child & Adolescent Psychiatry*, 36(5), 653-660.

Edmondson, C. (1986). *Elective Mutism in Children: An Examination of its Characteristics* and Remediation. DPSE dissertation, Oxford Polytechnic, UK.

Ethnic Minority Achievement Support Service. (2004). Supporting Pupils with English as an Additional Language. Milton Keynes: Milton Keynes Council.

Feingold, A. (1994). Gender differences in personality: A meta-analysis. *Psychological Bulletin*, 116(3), 429-456.

Ford, M., Sladeczek, I., Carlson, J., & Kratochwill, T. R. (1998). Selective Mutism:

Phenomenological characteristics. *School Psychology Quarterly*, *13*(3), 192-227.

Friedman, R., & Karagan, N. (1973). Characteristics and management of elective mutism in children. *Psychology in the Schools*, *10*(2), 249-252.

Gameson, J., & Rhydderch, G. (2008). The Constructionist Model of Informed and

Reasoned Action (COMOIRA). In Kelly, B., Woolfson L., & Boyle, J. (Ed.),

Frameworks for Practice in Educational Psychology: A Textbook for Trainees and

Practitioners (pp. 94-120). London: Jessica Kingsley.

Gameson, J., Rhydderch, G., Ellis, D., & Carroll, H. C. M. (2003). Constructing a flexible model of integrated professional practice: Part 1, conceptual and theoretical issues. *Educational & Child Psychology*, 20(4), 96-115.

Gameson, J., Rhydderch, G., Ellis, D., & Carroll, H. C. M. (2005). Constructing a flexible model of integrated professional practice: Part 2, process and practice issues. *Educational & Child Psychology*, 22(4), 41-55.

Geddes, H. (2006). Attachment in the Classroom. The Links Between Children's Early

Experience, Emotional Well-Being and Performance in School. London: Worth

Publishing.

Gibbs, S. (2012, January). *Teachers' Resilience and Well-Being: A Role for Educational Psychology*. Paper presented at the Division of Educational and Child Psychology annual development event, Strateford-Upon-Avon.

Gibson, W. (2006). Thematic Analysis. Unpublished article. Retrieved from: http://www.ilit.org/air/files/thematic_analysis.doc

Goll, K. (1979). Role structure and subculture in families of elective mutists. *Family process*, 18, 55-68.

Gu, Q., & Day, C. (2007). Teachers resilience: A necessary condition for effectiveness.

*Teaching & Teacher Education, 23(8), 1302-1316.

Hammersley, M. (1992). What's Wrong with Ethnography? London: Routledge.

Hargreaves, D. H. (1978). What teaching does to teachers. New Society, 43, 450-542.

Hayes, D. (2004). Recruitment and retention: Insights into the motivation of primary trainee teachers in England. *Research in Education*, 71(1), 37-49.

Hoy, A. W. (2008). What motivates teachers? Important work on a complex question.

*Learning & Instruction, 18(5), 492-498.

- Ingersoll, R. M., & Smith, T. M. (2003). The wrong solution to the teacher shortage.

 *Keeping Good Teachers, 60(8), 30-33.
- Imich, A. (1998). Selective Mutism: Implications of current research for the practice of educational psychologists. *Educational Psychology in Practice*, *14*(1), 52-59.
- Ishikawa, S., Okajima, I., Matsuoka, H., & Sakano, Y. (2007). Cognitive behavioural therapy for anxiety disorders in children and adolescents: A meta-analysis. *Child & Adolescent Mental Health*, 12(4), 164–172.
- Johnson, S., Cooper, C., Cartwright, S., Donald, I., Taylor, P., & Millet, C. (2005). The experience of work-related stress across occupations. *Journal of Managerial Psychology*, 20(2), 178-187.
- Johnson, M., & Wintgens, A. (2001). *The Selective Mutism Resource Manual*. Oxon, UK: Speechmark.
- Jordan, A., & Stanovich, P. (2003). Teachers' personal epistemological beliefs about students with disabilities as indicators of effective teaching practices. *Journal of Research in*

Special Educational Needs, 3(1), 1471-3802.

Kassmaul, A. (1877). Die StiJrungen der Sprache. In Dow, S. P., Sonies, B. C., Scjeob, D.,
Moss, S. E., & Leonard, H. L. (1995). Practical guidelines for the assessment and treatment of Selective Mutism. Journal of the American Academy of Child & Adolescent Psychiatry, 34(7), 836-846.

Kieschke, U., & Schaarschmidt, U. (2008). Professional commitment and health among teachers in Germany: A typological approach. *Learning & Instruction*, 18(5), 429-437.

Kopp, S., & Gillberg, C. (1997). Selective Mutism: A population-based study. A research note. *Journal of Child Psychology & Psychiatry*, 38(2), 257-262.

Kristensen, H. (2000). Selective Mutism and co-morbidity with developmental disorder/delay, anxiety dirsorder and elimination disorder. *Journal of the American Academy of Child & Adolescent Psychiatry*, 39(2), 249-256.

Kristensen, H., & Torgersen, S. (2001). MCMI-II personality traits and symptom traits in parents of children with Selective Mutism: A case-control study. *Journal of Abnormal*

Psychology, 110(4), 648-652.

Kumpulainen, K., Rasanen, E., Raaska, H., & Somppi, V. (1998). Selective mutism among second-graders in elementary school. *European Child & Adolescent Psychiatry*, 7, 24–29.

Kvale, S. (1996). *Interviews*. London: Sage Publications.

Lazarus, R. S. (1993). From psychological stress to emotions: A history of changing outlooks. *Annual Review of Psychology, 44*, 1–22.

Loftus, E. F. (1977). Shifting human color memory. *Memory & Cognition*, *5*, 696-699.

Lesser- Katz, M. (1986). Stranger reaction and elective mutism in young children. American Journal of Orthopsychiatry, 56, 458-469.

Lincoln, Y. S., & Guba, E. G. (1985). *Naturalistic Inquiry*. Beverly Hills: Sage Publications.

Loftus, E. F. (1979a). Eyewitness Testimony. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press.

Loftus, E. F., & Palmer, J.E. (1974). Reconstruction of automobile destruction: An example of the interaction between language and memory. *Journal of Verbal Learning & Verbal behaviour*, 13, 585-589.

Looff, D. H. (1971). *Appalachia's Children: The Challenge of Mental Health*. Lexington, KY: University Press of Kentucky.

Mackay, T. (2007). Educational psychology: The fall and rise of therapy. *Educational & Child Psychology*, 24(1), 7-18.

Mackay, T. (2009, September). *The Future of Educational Psychology*. Paper presented at the 'Psych Odyssey' Cardiff TEP conference: Cardiff University.

Malmberg, L. E. (2008). Student teachers' achievement goal orientations during teacher studies: Antecedents, correlates and outcomes. *Learning & Instruction*, 18(5), 438-452.

Manassis, K., Tannock, R., Garland, J. E., Minde, K., McInnes, A., & Clark, S. (2007). The sounds of silence: Language, cognition, and anxiety in Selective Mutism. *Journal of the American Academy of Child & Adolescent Psychiatry*, 46(9), 1187–1195.

Maxwell, J. A. (1992). Understanding and validity in qualitative research. *Harvard Educational Review*, 62(3), 279-300.

McCloskey, M., & Zaragoza, M. (1985a). Misleading postevent information and memory for events: Arguments and evidence against memory impairment hypotheses. *Journal of Experimental Psychology: General*, 114, 1-16.

Miller, A. (1995). Teachers' attributions of causality, control and responsibility in respect of difficult pupil behaviour and its successful management. *Educational Psychology*, 15, 457–471.

Miller, A. (2003). *Teachers, Parents and Classroom Behaviour. A Psychosocial Approach.*Maidenhead: Open University Press.

Miller, P. V. & Cannell, C. F. (1997). Interviewing for social research. In Keeves, J. P.

(1997). Educational research, methodology and measurement: An international handbook (pp. 361-70). Oxford: Elsevier Science Ltd.

Moon, A. M., Mullee, M. A., Thomson, R. L., Speller, V., & Roderick, P. (1999). Health-related research and evaluation in schools. *Health Education*, 1(1), 27-34.

Newton, C. (1995). 'Circles of Adults'. Educational Psychology in Practice, 11(2), 8-14.

Noell, G. H. (2008). Appraising and praising systemic work to support systems change:

Where we might be and where we might go. *School Psychology Review*, 37(3), 333-336.

Omdal, H., & Galloway, D. (2007). Could Selective Mutism be re-conceptualised as a specific phobia of expressive speech? An exploratory post-hoc study. *Child & Adolescent Mental Health*, 13(2), 74-81.

Padesky, C. A., & Mooney, K. A. (1990). Presenting the cognitive model to clients.

*International Cognitive Therapy Newsletter, 6, 13-14.

Parrott, W. (2001). Emotions in Social Psychology. Psychology Press: Philadelphia.

Patton, M. Q. (1990). *Qualitative Evaluation & Research Methods*. London: Sage Publications.

Rasmussen, R. E., Todd, R. D., Neuman, R. J., Heath, A. C., Reich, W., & Rohde, L. A. (2002). Comparison of male adolescent-report of attention deficit/hyperactivity disorder (ADHD) symptoms across two cultures using latent class and principal components analysis. *Journal of Child Psychology & Psychiatry*, 43(6), 797-805.

Reissman, C. K. (1993). Narrative Analysis. London: Sage Publications.

Riley, P. (2011). Attachment Theory and the Teacher-Student Relationship: A Practical Guide for Teachers, Teacher Educators and School Leaders. London: Routledge.

Rogers, C. R. (1951). Client-Centred Therapy. Boston: Hughton Mifflin.

Ruzicka, B. B., & Sackin, H. D. (1974). Elective mutism: The impact on the patient's silent detachment upon the therapist. *Journal of the American Academy of Child Psychiatry*, 13, 551-561.

Scott, E. (1977). A desensitisation programme for the treatment of mutism in a seven year old girl: A case report. *Journal of Child Psychology and Psychiatry*, 18, 263-270.

Shreeve, D. F. (1999). Elective Mutism: Origins in stranger anxiety and selective attention.

*Bulletin of the Menninger Clinic, 55, 491-504.

Silverman, D. (1993). Interpreting Qualitative Data. London: Sage Publications.

Sroufe, L. A. (1983). Infant-caregiver attachment patterns of adaptation in pre-school: The roots of maladaptation and competence. In Permutter, M. (Ed). *Minnesota Symposium in Child Psychology*, *16*, 41-81.

Steele, H. (2002). State of the art: Attachment theory. The Psychologist, 15(10), 518-522.

TDA. (2011). Annual Report and Accounts. London: The Stationery Office.

The British Psychological Society. (2006). *Code of Ethics and Conduct*. The British Psychological Society: London.

Toerien, M., & Wilkinson, S. (2004). Exploring the depilation norm: A qualitative questionnaire study of women's body hair removal. *Qualitative Research in Psychology*, 1, 69-92.

Tramer, M. (1934). Elekriver Mutisrnus bei Kindem. In Dow, S. P., Sonies, B. C., Scjeob,
D., Moss, S. E., & Leonard, H. L. (1995). Practical guidelines for the assessment and treatment of Selective Mutism. *Journal of the American Academy of Child & Adolescent Psychiatry*, 34(7), 836-846.

Tschannen-Moran, M., & Woolfolk Hoy, A. W. (2007). The differential antecedents of self-efficacy beliefs of novice and experienced teachers. *Teaching & Teacher Education*, 23, 944–956.

Tschannen-Moran, M., & McMaster, P. (2009). Sources of self-efficacy: Four professional development formats and their relationship to self-efficacy and implementation of a new teaching strategy. *The Elementary School Journal*, 110(2), 228-245.

Tuckett, A. G. (2005). Applying thematic analysis theory to practice: A researcher's experience. *Contemporary Nurse*, 19, 75-87.

Tuckman, B. W. (1972). Conducting Educational Research. New York: Harcourt Brace Jovanovich.

Wagner, P. (2000). Consultation. Developing a comprehensive approach to service delivery. *Educational Psychology in Practice*, 16(1), 9-18.

Walters, T. V. (2002). *A Study of Selective Mutism*. Unpublished Masters thesis, Cardiff University, UK.

Watt, H. M. G., & Richardson, P. W. (2008). Motivations, perceptions, and aspirations concerning teaching as a career for different types of beginning teachers. *Learning & Instruction*, 18, 408-428.

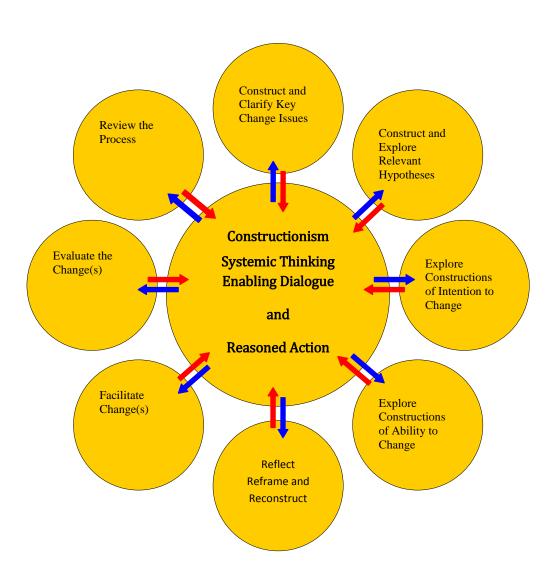
Wheldall, K., & Merrett, F. (1988). Which classroom behaviours do primary school teachers say they find most troublesome? *Educational Review*, 40(1), 13-27.

World Health Organisation. (1992). International Statistical Classification of Diseases and Related Health Problems, 1989 Revision. Geneva: World Health Organisation.

- Wright, H. L. (1968). A clinical study of children who refuse to talk in school. *Journal of the American Academy of Psychiatry*, 7, 603-617.
- Yeganeh, R., Beidel, D. C., Turner, S. M., Pina, A. A., & Silverman, W. K. (2003). Clinical distinctions between Selective Mutism and social phobia: An investigation of childhood psychopathology. *Journal of the American Academy of Child & Adolescent Psychiatry*, 42(9), 1069–1075.
- Zaragoza, M. S., McCloskey, M., & Jamis, M. (1987). Misleading postevent information and recall of the original event: Further evidence against the memory impairment hypothesis. *Journal of Experimental Psychology: Learning, Memory, & Cognition,* 13, 36-44.
- Zins, J. E., Bloodworth, M. R., Weissberg, R. P., & Walberg, H. J. (2004). *The Scientific Base Linking Social and Emotional Learning to School Success*. In Zins, J. E., Weissberg, R. P., Wang, M. C., & Walberg, H. J. (Eds.), Building academic success on social and emotional learning: What does the research say? (pp. 3-22). New York: Teachers College Press.

Appendices

Appendix A. Constructionist Model of Informed Reasoned Action (COMOIRA, Gameson & Rhydderch, 2008)



Appendix B. Teacher Prompt Questions

- 1. What age was the selectively mute child you taught?
- 2. How long did you teach the selectively mute child for?
- 3. Did the selectively mute child have any other conditions or diagnoses?
- 4. How many years of teaching experience did you have when you first began teaching the selectively mute child?
- 5. Can you tell me when and how you first realised the child was selectively mute?
- 6. a- Can you describe the child's means of communication with peers in school and if these changed over time?
 - b- Can you describe the child's means of communication with adults in school and if these changed over time?
- 7. Can you describe the contact you had with the selectively mute child's parents and how this changed over time?
- 8. a- Did the selectively mute child have any siblings?
 - b- If yes, can you describe their patterns of communication?
 - c- Can you tell me your interpretation of these patterns of communication?
- 9. a- Can you tell me about your thoughts when you first started teaching the selectively mute child and how these changed over time?
 - b- What were your thoughts about why the child was selectively mute?
 - c- What function do you think the mute behaviour served for the young person?

- 10. a- Can you tell me about your feelings when you first started teaching the selectively mute child and how these changed over time?
 - b- Can you describe a time when you felt most ____ [name of emotion]?
- 11. a- How did this experience of having a selectively mute child in your class impact on your work?
 - b- In particular, how did having a selectively mute child in your class impact on your pedagogy and delivery of the curriculum?
- 12. c- Did the impact vary between different subject areas and if so how?
- 13. a- Can you tell me about some of the techniques or strategies you used when working with the selectively mute child?
 - b- Did these techniques or strategies change over time?
- 14. To what extent did your training or Continuing Professional Development (CPD) prepare you for working with this child?
- 15. If you taught a selectively mute child in the future, would the experiences that you have had help you? If so, in what way?
- 16. Can you tell me how teaching a selectively mute child impacted on your role identity?
- 17. a- What support was helpful to you at the time?
 - b- What support would have been helpful?
- 18. a- Did you have involvement with outside agencies and if so, was this helpful?
 - b- Did you have involvement with an Educational Psychologist and if so, was this helpful?

- 19. In your opinion, what additional support do you think an Educational Psychologist could provide to teachers who are teaching a child with Selective Mutism?
- 20. Are there any other issues or comments you would like to make about your experiences of teaching a selectively mute child that have not been covered by my questions so far?
- 21. Are there any other questions you expected to be asked? If so, what would the answers to those be?

Appendix C. Email to SENCos in Schools

Dear xxx,

I am a Trainee Educational Psychologist at Cardiff University based on placement in xxx Borough Council and am researching teacher's current and previous experiences of having taught a selectively mute child.

Therefore, I wanted to enquire if you currently have, or have recently had, a selectively mute child in your school and whether I would be able to contact their teacher. My research consists of a 30-45 minute semi-structured interview arranged at a convenient time and location for the teacher.

I would be most grateful for your assistance. Many thanks and best wishes,

Reem Olivia Dean

Researcher	Supervisor	Ethics Committee Secretary
Reem Olivia Dean	Dr. Simon Griffey	Dominique Mortlock
Postgraduate Student	Research Director, DEdPsy Professional Training Programme	Psychology Ethics Committee Secretary
School of Psychology	School of Psychology	School of Psychology
Cardiff University	Cardiff University	Cardiff University
Tower building	Tower building	Tower building
Park Place	Park Place	Park Place
Cardiff	Cardiff	Cardiff
CF10 3AT	CF10 3AT	CF10 3AT
Tel: 029 2087 4007	Tel: 029 2087 0366	Tel: 029 2087 4007
Email:	Email: GriffeySJ@Cardiff.ac.uk	Email: psychethics@cf.ac.uk
saprod@groupwise.cf.ac.uk		

Appendix D. Email to Teachers in Schools

Dear xxx,

I am a Trainee Educational Psychologist at Cardiff University based on placement in xxx Borough Council and am researching teacher's experiences of having taught a selectively mute child.

I was wondering therefore, if you would like to take part in my research project. This would consist of a 30-45 minute semi-structured interview arranged at a convenient time and location for you.

Thank you for your consideration of this project.

Best wishes,

Reem Olivia Dean

Researcher	Supervisor	Ethics Committee Secretary
Reem Olivia Dean	Dr. Simon Griffey	Dominique Mortlock
Postgraduate Student	Research Director, DEdPsy	Psychology Ethics Committee
	Professional Training Programme	Secretary
School of Psychology	School of Psychology	School of Psychology
Cardiff University	Cardiff University	Cardiff University
Tower building	Tower building	Tower building
Park Place	Park Place	Park Place
Cardiff	Cardiff	Cardiff
CF10 3AT	CF10 3AT	CF10 3AT
Tel: 029 2087 4007	Tel: 029 2087 0366	Tel: 029 2087 4007
Email:	Email: GriffeySJ@Cardiff.ac.uk	Email: psychethics@cf.ac.uk
saprod@groupwise.cf.ac.uk		

Appendix E. Letter to SENCos

School of Psychology

Cardiff University

Tower Building

Park Place

Cardiff

CF103AT

Email: saprod@groupwise.cf.ac.uk

Tel: 029 2087 4007

(Date)

Dear xxx,

I am a second year Trainee Educational Psychologist at the University of Cardiff and am currently conducting a piece of research on Selective Mutism.

I am writing to enquire if you currently have, or have recently had, a selectively mute child in your school and whether I would be able to contact their teacher. Teachers would be required to contribute their experiences of teaching a selectively mute child during an interview lasting between 30 to 45 minutes. Written consent was obtained and they was informed of their right to withdraw at any point during the study. Data was stored anonymously in a password protected document and the audio was deleted 2 weeks after the interview. Teachers will also be debriefed at the end of the study.

The research project was supervised by Dr. Simon Griffey (Research Director, DEdPsy Professional Training Programme) at Cardiff University.

CARDIFF UNIVERSITY PRIFYSGOL CAERDYD

Many	thanks	in	advance	for	your	consideration	١of	this	projec	t.

Sincerely,

Reem Olivia Dean (Trainee Educational Psychologist)

Researcher	Supervisor	Ethics Committee Secretary		
Reem Olivia Dean	Dr. Simon Griffey	Dominique Mortlock		
Postgraduate Student	Research Director, DEdPsy Professional Training Programme	Psychology Ethics Committee Secretary		
School of Psychology	School of Psychology	School of Psychology		
Cardiff University	Cardiff University	Cardiff University		
Tower building	Tower building	Tower building		
Park Place	Park Place	Park Place		
Cardiff	Cardiff	Cardiff		
CF10 3AT	CF10 3AT	CF10 3AT		
Tel: 029 2087 4007	Tel: 029 2087 0366	Tel: 029 2087 4007		
Email: saprod@groupwise.cf.ac.uk	Email: GriffeySJ@Cardiff.ac.uk	Email: psychethics@cf.ac.uk		

Appendix F. Participant Consent Form



School of Psychology, Cardiff University

Consent Form

I understand that my participation in this project will involve contributing my experiences of teaching a selectively mute child during an interview. I understand that participation in this study is entirely voluntary and that I can withdraw from the study at any time without giving a reason. I understand that I am free to ask questions at any time and to discuss my concerns with the Cardiff trainee (Reem Dean) or their University Supervisor Dr. Simon Griffey (Research Director, DEdPsy Professional Training Programme).

I understand that the data was collected confidentially to the researcher and was stored in a password protected document that was anonymous to others. I understand that the data will then be coded to ensure anonymity and that a connection between the data and source will not be possible to make by an individual outside of the interview process. I understand that the audio was deleted 2 weeks after the interview during which time I have the right to withdraw my data. I understand that the raw data was deleted in July following grading of the report by the university external examiner. I also understand that at the end of the study I was provided with a debriefing.

I,	· ,			onsent to	participate	in the	study con	ducted
by Reem	Olivia Dean.	School of Psycho	ology, C	Cardiff Un	iversity wit	h the su	nervision	of Dr.

Signed:			
Position:			

Simon Griffey (Research Director, DEdPsy Professional Training Programme).

Researcher	Supervisor	Ethics Committee Secretary		
Reem Olivia Dean	Dr. Simon Griffey	Dominique Mortlock		
Postgraduate Student	Research Director, DEdPsy Professional Training Programme	Psychology Ethics Committee Secretary		
School of Psychology	School of Psychology	School of Psychology		
Cardiff University	Cardiff University	Cardiff University		
Tower building	Tower building	Tower building		
Park Place	Park Place	Park Place		
Cardiff	Cardiff	Cardiff		
CF10 3AT	CF10 3AT	CF10 3AT		
Tel: 029 2087 4007	Tel: 029 2087 0366	Tel: 029 2087 4007		
Email: saprod@groupwise.cf.ac.uk	Email: GriffeySJ@Cardiff.ac.uk	Email: psychethics@cf.ac.uk		

Appendix G. Debriefing Form



School of Psychology, Cardiff University

Debriefing Form

Thank you for agreeing to take part in this study. As mentioned previously, the present study aims to explore teachers' experiences of working with selectively mute children. There is little research regarding teacher's perceptions and experiences of teaching selectively mute children although the literature suggests that this can be a very anxiety provoking experience. Therefore, there is a need for good quality, comprehensive research. It is hoped that your contribution in this research will lead to a better understanding of teachers' experiences and may for instance help to formulate more effective interventions,, most of which are currently school based.

As a reminder, your data was held anonymously in a password protected document, your data was stored in a password protected document that was anonymous to others. The researcher will ensure anonymity by coding the data during transcription so that a connection between the data and source will not be possible to make by an individual outside of the interview process. The audio was deleted 2 weeks after the interview and the raw data was deleted in July 2012 following grading of the report by the university external examiner. During that two week period, you have the right to withdraw your data.

If you wish to discuss any issues in the future, please do not hesitate to contact the Cardiff trainee (Reem Olivia Dean) or their University Supervisor Dr. Simon Griffey (Research Director, DEdPsy Professional Training Programme).

Many thanks again.

Researcher	Supervisor	Ethics Committee Secretary		
Reem Olivia Dean	Dr. Simon Griffey	Dominique Mortlock		
Postgraduate Student	Research Director, DEdPsy Professional Training Programme	Psychology Ethics Committee Secretary		
School of Psychology	School of Psychology	School of Psychology		
Cardiff University	Cardiff University	Cardiff University		
Tower building	Tower building	Tower building		
Park Place	Park Place	Park Place		
Cardiff	Cardiff	Cardiff		
CF10 3AT	CF10 3AT	CF10 3AT		
Tel: 029 2087 4007	Tel: 029 2087 0366	Tel: 029 2087 4007		
Email: saprod@groupwise.cf.ac.uk	Email: GriffeySJ@Cardiff.ac.uk	Email: psychethics@cf.ac.uk		

Appendix H. Diary Schedule

1. Please use a minimum of 2 sentences to describe your *feelings* or *emotions* during the last fortnight. Please can you also rate the intensity of your emotions on a scale of 1 to 10 with 1 being the least intense and 10 being the most intense.

Emotio	on:								
1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	9	10
Emotion:									
1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	9	10
Emotion:									
1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	9	10

- 2. Please use a minimum of 2 sentences to describe your *thoughts* during the last fortnight.
- 3. Please use a minimum of 2 sentences to describe your behaviours during the last fortnight.
- 4. Any other comments?

Appendix I. Details Regarding Interview Schedule Emailed to TEP

Teacher's initials	
Mobile Number	
Alternative Contact Number	
Location of interview	
Last known location	
prior to interview	
and contact number	
Date of interview	
Time of interview	
Expected end time of interview	N

Please follow the alternative procedures listed below if there has been no contact from the researcher more than 30 minutes outside the specified time for the end of the interview.

- 1- Call the researcher on their mobile phone. If this attempt at contact is unsuccessful, proceed to the second point.
- 2- Call the alternative contact number. If this attempt at contact is unsuccessful, to proceed to the third point.
- 3- Call the last known location of the researcher and enquire about their whereabouts.

Appendix J. Example of an Interview Transcript (Transcript 1)

Researcher: So what age was the selectively mute child you taught?

Participant 1: She was 11, she's was a year six.

Researcher: And female.

Participant 1: Yes.

Researcher: And how long did you teach her for?

Participant 1: For one year.

Researcher: Did she have any other conditions or diagnoses?

Participant 1: Anxiety.

Researcher: Anxiety, OK. Was that diagnosed?

Participant 1: It was diagnosed by the Ed psych when I taught her and she went to the anxiety clinic.

Researcher: Oh, right. And how many years of teaching experience did you have when you first started teaching the selectively mute child?

Participant 1: I'd been teaching for 15 years [laughter].

Researcher: [Laughter]. Wow and was that the first time you'd come across selective Mutism?

Participant 1: It was, yes.

Researcher: Because it's very rare actually.

Participant 1: It is, yes. The first time.

Researcher: And can you tell me when and how you first realised the child was selectively

mute?

Participant 1: We'd known prior to her coming into my classroom so as she came through

the school, she joined us as an infant child. From another school, she came with as a Year 2.

She came from another school and she was very, very quiet, painfully shy. But actually as

time went on we discovered it was more than just that. So in her transfer to secondary we

became very anxious about how she would transfer and so the Ed psych did more testing and

analysis hence the diagnosis and so she went to the anxiety clinic and her mum was obviously

very concerned and at home she was fine and responded perfectly well. At school had

behaviour were quite unusual.

Researcher: And what year was it that you taught her?

Participant 1: Just last year. 2009 to 2010.

Researcher: And can you describe the child's means of communication with peers in school

and if these changed over time?

Participant 1: With peers, she had a very dear friend who was very close to her and she was

fine about the girl. She was very quiet when she spoke and she was happy to tell her

anything. In a group environment or a group situation she would almost select the children

that she wanted to speak to and you could almost think that she was being rude in many

respects but she wasn't so there was another girl that she worked with in the same academic

group that she was happy to talk to but she wouldn't talk to the boys who were with her.

Researcher: So she was very selective?

Participant 1: Yes, so she would just select the certain people that she would talk to. With

myself, if she could get away with a nod or a shake of the head that was great but I would

have a one way conversation with her. Completely talk to myself really [laughter] but with

my TA who she'd known as she'd come up the school, the same TA had been with her she

had a much more open relationship and she would talk in more than a nod or a shake.

Researcher: So what year had she been in of when she came to the school?

Participant 1: I think she was in Year 2. In my class she was in Year 6, so she was 11. But

the Mutism became more apparent the older she got because you thought she was just very

shy and a very quiet child and you thought that's very good, that's very nice but the anxiety

started to take over a bit more and that's when different behaviours presented themselves. An

odd thing that she would do, in a whole class discussion she would put her hand up and

participate if she was sure she had the answer.

Researcher: So she would actually speak?

Participant 1: Yes, she would. You wouldn't necessarily get a full sentence but if I asked her

a question to a problem that we had been doing, she loved History so her hand would fly up.

So it was something she would do. So she didn't sit in passively within the class at all.

Researcher: So she was engaged?

Participant 1: Yes, she was very engaged.

Researcher: But not necessarily verbally all the time?

Participant 1: No, no.

Researcher: And how did you know that she had Selective Mutism?

Participant 1: It was when the Ed psych came in and did some further tests. I mean, I don't

know whether it was a diagnosis as such but that was the intonation as to the condition that she had.

Researcher: And can you describe the child's means of communication with adults in school and if these changed over time?

Participant 1: She was very good with my TA who had been there a long time so she would have a little joke but it was always very quiet and very whispered her voice. But with me as the class teacher she clearly saw me as someone she could trust and rely upon but it was very much a nod and a shake and a one word answer. Other adults around the school, she was never challenging, she was such a good girl she was very well behaved but it would be that startled rabbit look in her face if somebody would ask her a question or she didn't know the answer or wasn't quite sure about. She'd be quite startled by that.

Researcher: That's funny because I've heard the expression like a rabbit caught in headlights before and that sounds quite similar.

Participant 1: Yes, we went on an adventure week and she loved all that. A very practical girl but again the instructors. She listened very well to what the instructors were saying but she wouldn't engage in any conversation with them at all.

Researcher: That's interesting, so can you describe the contact you had with the selectively mute child's parents and how this changed over time?

Participant 1: Her mum was very good, she'd come in because she had an IEP and not because of these problems it was more of an academic thing and so mum was very good at coming in to talk to us. That's how we managed to get the referral to the Ed psych and how we managed to get the referral to the anxiety clinic. That involved the parents being involved in that. Didn't see a lot of that at all but mum was very good and very open at parents evening

and she had come into school if there were any other problems and she lent me a DVD which the BBC did a programme about children with this condition and she said "did you manage to watch it?" like Panorama or something and it was fantastic. I could really see the similarities that within her. And she said "It is that isn't it Mrs xxx?" And I said "Yes I can see that" and one of our TAs who lives in the village actually, her son has Aspergers although very high functioning but she responded very well to xxx as well and she spent a lot of the time with the mum too and they became quite, I don't know when you have children with problems you have something in common. She became quite supportive to mum because mum got obviously naturally very upset about it.

Researcher: That's good, so you had quite a good dialogue with home.

Participant 1: Yes, she was brilliant. Mum was fantastic and that sort of thing. As I say, didn't see much of dad. He did work shifts and that sort of thing.

Researcher: And can you tell me if the selectively mute child had any siblings?

Participant 1: Yes she did, she had an older sister.

Researcher: And can you describe her patterns of communication?

Participant 1: No, she was much older. I don't know her at all.

Researcher: And can you tell me about your thoughts when you first started teaching the selectively mute child and how these changed over time?

Participant 1: I didn't really have any thoughts, as far as I was concerned she was another child in my class whose needs I needed to meet. It didn't really worry me. If that's how she was comfortable, academically she made excellent progress in the year and I could live with it. She was never in danger. I knew she would speak to me but I wasn't expecting a lot when

she did speak. But I always did have a get out clause of her best friend who if necessary I

would use her to intervene and she was quite happy to speak to her.

Researcher: And what were your thoughts about why the child was selectively mute?

Participant 1: Mum and I did spend quite a bit of time together and we did talk about her

past and things that had happened in her past where when she was much younger she lived

with her grandparents and her grandmother apparently had been a bit unkind about the fact

that she wasn't a very outgoing child. Her mum feels that could have been the start of it,

small things she exacerbated the problem. Like really, maybe she was just a bit shy and I

think it was at that point that mum feels that it was a real turning point in her life that it

brought the doors down and the lines of communication closed. She said grandma was very

critical.

Researcher: Did she say when she went to live with grandma at all?

Participant 1: I'm not sure, I think it was before they came to our school. I think it's a

marriage breakdown from what I can gather. Although there is a dad, I don't think he's her

father. I don't really know to be honest. It was never, the family situation never presented

itself as a problem so therefore I didn't need to know that information necessarily but I think

it was before they came to our school so perhaps they moved in with grandma, so perhaps

they lost their house or something, but she saw that as a significant turning point.

Researcher: So that was your interpretations and mums or did you have any other thoughts?

Participant 1: I didn't have any other thoughts, no. That sort of explained it. Before that we

thought she was just a very quiet child.

Researcher: That's links into the anxiety anyway.

Participant 1: Absolutely, yes it does.

Researcher: And what function do you think the mute behaviour served for the child?

Participant 1: It's almost like a security thing and she'd shut herself off from the outside

world and I think it was like anxiety overload for her. I think she used it as a get out.

Certainly in times when she was very anxious like transfer to secondary school and SATs as

well, we saw real differences in her behaviour, agitated behaviour, very unsettled not bad

behaviour at all but if you watched her it was different behaviour. She would hit her head or

pull her hair, she really despise mental arithmetic, I can identify with that one [laughter] but it

wouldn't be what the other children were doing. It would be quite extreme which is when the

referral to the anxiety clinic became really important. That she did that.

Researcher: So periods of transition she found very stressful.

Participant 1: Absolutely. She became more introverted, she just didn't speak as much.

Researcher: They are so stressful SATs, we've abandoned them in Wales.

Participant 1: Some schools did as well but we still did them.

Researcher: And can you tell me about your feelings when you first started teaching the

selectively mute child and how these changed over time?

Participant 1: I mean, I just didn't consider her any different to any other child but I just

wanted to from a transition point of view, I could see that was a big hurdle for her to climb

and I just needed to support her in the best possible way I could so that it was the least

stressful for her. I worried a great deal about her it and how she was going to cope at

secondary school. But as far as I know, she still has her friend who is very much buddying

her. There is security in the patterns of what she's doing every day, but I don't think she's

changed very much in the way she is responding. But just anxious that we could give her the

right support that we needed.

Researcher: So just anxious and a bit worried as well?

Participant 1: Yes, yes.

Researcher: And how did this experience of having a selectively mute child in your class

impact on your work?

Participant 1: It didn't really, to be honest because any child's needs need to be met

wherever they are so from that point of view I tried to meet her needs as I would any other

child but from a personal point of view, I found it quite interesting doing the research on the

background as to why she might be the way she is and looking at other cases as well. That

DVD was quite enlightening really, that whole light bulb moment and understanding the

reasons why it might be happening as well. Then when mum came to share the information

that there was a point in her life when she was heavily criticised for being quiet, I thought

that kind of explains a lot.

Researcher: That was very insightful of mum to show you the DVD.

Participant 1: It was brilliant and she said did I mind. And I said of course I don't. I think

there were three different case studies on it but one of them was very like xxx.

Researcher: It's lovely when you get parents who are so engaged, isn't it?

Participant 1: Yes, she was brilliant.

Researcher: And in particular, how did having a selectively mute child in your class impact

on your pedagogy and delivery of the curriculum?

Participant 1: I don't know that it did really. From an SEN point of view, she wasn't a very

high attainer so from that point of view she was set targets and some of them were communication and targets but I would, if she stuck her hand up to volunteer, I would leap on it and if she wanted to do something or she wanted to give me an answer to a question I would ignore all others because I knew it was just so important for her to be recognised and her voice to be heard so I would make an effort if xxx stuck her hand up and she volunteered for something I would make sure that she did. Just to try and sort of include her but also she was artistic and my degree was in Art as well so we had that come interest, so when we did Art lessons and things we would make a big deal of her work and make sure it was displayed with others. We would make a conscious effort of celebrating the things that she was really

Researcher: Yes, so giving her a different way of expressing herself through art?

good at and giving her voice in a different way, does that make sense?

Participant 1: Yes, yes.

Researcher: That's lovely, brilliant. And also you mention the fact that she had an IEP and were any of those targets related specifically to her anxiety or her Mutism?

Participant 1: Mutism because we had set a target that she had to give more than one word answers on so many occasions. Things like that so communication and to different adults because as I say, if she was a bit more familiar with you then you were alright but if you were a complete stranger you wouldn't get a lot from her. Our Ed psych found it quite difficult to do a full analysis and a full report on her. She broke it up into small sections so that she could cope with it and xxx didn't seem to mind spending time with the psychologist because again she sees her around the school from time to time so a fairly familiar face and we had done some work prior to the meeting. I think she found it quite challenging that the information that children would normally have just flooded out, didn't really come from her.

Researcher: So mum as well had prepared her beforehand.

Participant 1: Yes, yes.

Researcher: That's good and did the impact vary between different subject areas and if so

how?

Participant 1: Yes, she loathed maths with a passion, she liked English and went on to do

quite well. She got average SATs results. That was her thing, she would really close down

and she worked always with my TA's group, there were four of them who needed additional

support and so she had an environment that she was used to, quite secure. But still it was the

subject where I think the anxieties took over to such a degree that she really would close

down.

Researcher: So it really hindered her learning?

Participant 1: Absolutely, yes definitely because we believed it was in there but I think she

just wouldn't allow, for her that was an enormous barrier and she hated the subject so no

matter what we did. It was all encouragement, all praise, she did respond well to praise and

stickers and that kind of thing but she had just got that mind set from probably a historic thing

and we struggled to break it.

Researcher: But then for example in Art she was good?

Participant 1: Yes she was much more relaxed and History so her little eyes would light up

if it was topic work. She absolutely loved History and Geography and the humanities sort of

subjects and again stories. Story writing she was quite creative. She would have a really good

to go, she would sit for long sustained periods, quite happy. Whereas other children would

find that quite a struggle actually. She was quite confident to do that kind of thing. She was

reasonably sporty, that was something else. She was part of the girls' football team so she

would engage in those sort of team event, she was an excellent team player actually.

Researcher: Which she communicates with adults and peers during those games?

Participant 1: Not really, no.

Researcher: And can you tell me about some of the techniques or strategies you used when

working with the selectively mute child? You said verbal praise worked well.

Participant 1: Yes, lots of verbal praise. She responded well to stickers and team points, the

things that children usually do respond well to but we didn't do anything special other than

the fact that she did have a lot of TA support and our family support worker also got very

engaged in the transition programme to our secondary school which was very helpful for her

because as we identified very early on that was a real thing. As soon as they enter Year 6 you

are talking about the leaving! You can see she was just "oh" but I know she was fine and it

worked successfully. So giving extra adult support because although it didn't appear that she

wanted to it, actually that is exactly what she did want.

Researcher: And did these techniques or strategies change over time?

Participant 1: No, not really to be honest.

Researcher: Just consistent praise and support?

Participant 1: Yes, definitely.

Researcher: And to what extent did your training or Continuing Professional Development

(CPD) prepare you for working with this child?

Participant 1: My previous training?

Researcher: Yes, for example your initial teacher training or other CPD events?

Participant 1: No [laughter]. My teacher training most definitely did not prepare me for

working with any sort of child to be honest. Not really to be fair. I have worked with children

with all sorts of problems. I suppose working with children with ASD probably gave me the

most insight into these sorts of conditions. I think it would be fair to say that any sort of

training I had done, I could apply similar techniques, minimise change, she didn't like any

sort of change. It's those sorts of things that I could apply but not the teacher training, it was

so long ago [laughter]. I don't think we've even did anything on SEN.

Researcher: So if you taught a selectively mute child in the future, would the experiences

that you have had help you? If so, in what way?

Participant 1: Yes, definitely.

Researcher: So can you tell me how teaching a selectively mute child impacted on your role

identity?

Participant 1: On my role identity?

Researcher: Yes.

Participant 1: I don't think it has.

Researcher: Okay, interesting and what support was helpful to you at the time?

Participant 1: The support that I got from the family support worker was very, very good

and the parents. Latterly the Ed psych, once the statement had gone through because it takes

such a long time to have a child go right through the process. In the end it was helpful but

maybe if we had looked at giving her more support earlier on. It's not that she was ignored,

she wasn't and she had been seen as time had gone on but it was always considered that she

was a nervous shy child. It wasn't until the secondary transfer thing that because obviously

from our point of view and from the point of view of the Ed psych that is the point when you look at all the children who are going to transfer and she was identified as a child who would need extra support.

Researcher: And what support did the family worker offer you?

Participant 1: What she did was, she organised the transition programme. We started in January time and went then right the way through to the transition point and what we did was to look at her strengths and Art was one of them so we arranged to go up to the art department and take a couple of lessons. There were four children in total and three out of the four were quite artistic so she didn't stand out, so we weren't doing it specifically for her. It was couched in a way that it would benefit all. We asked her best friend whose mum is actually one of our teachers if she would mind if xxx was included in the transition programme to support xxx because I think if we, the other two were boys and I think she would have done it. There would not have been in any problem about that but I think having xxx there are as well just eased the transition for her because she had less anxiety because she knew that she was with somebody that she knew she could communicate with and speak to so a family support worker was fantastic at looking at the needs of the children. So they did things like they went and had a snack there or at a really busy point, they went and bought something from the cafeteria. They then went and had lunch there are another time so again points of mass anxiety. When you're going to secondary school you think where do I eat my lunch, it's very different to primary school and they went into a History lesson and a Geography lesson. Things that were really important. I don't think they did a PE lesson but they just kept going so they kept becoming more familiar and she really facilitated all of that.

Researcher: So a transition plan. You said another source of support was the home environment and family so what sort of support did and offer a pass from the DVD?

Participant 1: Yes, it was just the good communication. Anything we tried mum would be

supportive of and things like the anxiety clinic. Some parents because they have to be

consulted, they have to be interviewed and things, they consider it often a failing on their

behalf. Mum said she would put anything aside to support her daughter so she was really very

engaged in being able to do that. We were very thankful that she was willing to put in that

commitment because you don't often find that families. They consider it a failure and

especially they don't see why they need to be interviewed as well as they see it as just the

child's problem and that's not what it's about. We often find it's quite difficult to get parents

to engage in that way but mum was fantastic, she really was brilliant.

Researcher: And do you think the anxiety clinic would be another source of support?

Participant 1: I had some conversations that I didn't get anything.

Researcher: Directly.

Participant 1: Yes, I was asked to fill in surveys and things so I didn't get anything directly

from them, no.

Researcher: And any other sources of support that you found helpful at the time?

Participant 1: No, I don't think so other than the school network and the SENCo. She is

excellent and obviously she drives the Ed Psych's time because she says look we need to

prioritise this child. Having her on board helped to push the process forward.

Researcher: Did you have involvement with outside agencies and if so, was this helpful? So

you mentioned a family support worker.

Participant 1: Yes, the family support worker and the Ed psych.

Researcher: And where they helpful?

Participant 1: Yes, definitely.

Researcher: And did you have involvement with an Educational Psychologist and if so, was

this helpful?

Participant 1: Yes, she's our school educational psychologist so she knows the school quite

well and the context and she did the battery of tests. She had seen her before in the past and

she came in and watched her in lessons and things like that. She didn't really offer us

anything practical but she did push forward the anxiety clinic referral so from that point of

view that was the most useful.

Researcher: So she facilitated support.

Participant 1: Yes, so she got mum on board and spoke to mum about it and she's a very

positive person so she always looks at the child's strengths so she did say things like xxx is

really good at Art, do you think you could make more of an effort to put up her work and

really celebrate it and if opportunities come up can she be chosen. I said "Oh yes not a

problem". It's a bit obvious to me but maybe not to some. Just awareness.

Researcher: Do you know what battery of tests she did?

Participant 1: I don't know, psychometric tests.

Researcher: Ok, and in your opinion, what additional support do you think an Educational

Psychologist could provide to teachers who are teaching a child with Selective Mutism?

Participant 1: I suppose if you looked more at the classroom practice, I mean she did

observe in context and then maybe you could offer support. There might be something that

you do or don't do so more looking at the teaching to see what impact that has on the child,

the individual. I don't know if there are other therapies any cognitive behaviour therapies

things like that which could be done or training being given on something like that to

understand what's going on behind it because it's not something you are born with but how

we can best support the children because sometimes when I have a one way conversation I

think what else can I do? I would not include her, it would be easier to ignore her actually.

She could have easily just slipped away but I didn't. She did listen and I don't know maybe if

educational psychologists were able to watch teachers or maybe make some suggestions or if

there are any programmes because I think there are different degrees of Mutism.

Researcher: OK, so it would be in terms of making practical suggestions.

Participant 1: Yes, practical suggestions would be really useful.

Researcher: And training and also evaluating the impact of those techniques.

Participant 1: Yes that would be really good and again for TAs as well because often they

are the people who work most closely with the children. In xxx's case it was the SEN element

as well because she needed the support to achieve academically as well. We just did our best

really.

Researcher: So training would be at the whole staff level?

Participant 1: I think that would be quite useful, yes. Particularly if you had a child that was

coming up the school, I think that would be quite useful.

Researcher: Did you have any kind of to hand over period with her previous teacher or

previous TAs?

Participant 1: The previous TA stayed but we are quite a small school so we do have a lot to

do with all the children. There are only 130 children in the school so everybody knows

everything but not specific. I got all her IEPs and notes that sort of thing is nothing more

specific than that.

Researcher: But there was a bit of a handover period?

Participant 1: Yes and the children do have a transition. So they go into their new classes,

they spend a day in their new classes and they do things to prepare themselves for the new

transition but I don't know if we could have done any more. I don't know.

Researcher: Last questions, are there any other issues or comments you would like to make

about your experiences of teaching a selectively mute child that have not been covered by my

questions so far?

Participant 1: I think they've been covered. Every child has the right to an education but for

some people certainly taking her out and about without sticking a label on them, and some

people didn't have a good understanding of the condition itself. So just having enough

understanding to perhaps why the child wasn't responding to you or certainly we had people

in that maybe you weren't that understanding. It's a bit like having an autistic child isn't it,

you have to point them out but almost you don't want to.

Researcher: Not draw too much attention to them.

Participant 1: Yes.

Researcher: And are there any other questions you expected to be asked? If so, what would

the answers to those be?

Participant 1: No that's pretty much it.

Appendix K. Pupil Demographics

Participant	Gender	Age	Co-morbid	Ethnicity	Birth order
No.	(M/F)	(Years)	conditions		
1	F	11	Anxiety	White, British	2 nd of 2
2	F	6	None	Nepalese	1 st of 2
3	M	4	Speech & language difficulties	White, British	3 rd of 6
4	M	6	None	White British	2 nd of 3
5	M	4	None	White British	2 nd of 2
6	F	7	None	White British	Unknown
7	M	9	None	White British	2 nd of 3
8	M	2	Aspergers	Kenyan	1 st of 2
9	F	9	Special Needs	White British	2 nd of 3
10	F	8	None	White British	Unknown
11	F	7	EAL	Nepalese	1 st of 2
12	F	6	EAL	Nepalese	Only child
13	F	5	EAL	Polish	Only child
14	F	10	None	White British	2 nd of 3
15	M	5	Diabetic	White British	2 nd of 3
16	F	9	None	Pakistani	1 st of 3
17	F	5	None	White British	Unknown
18	F	3	None	White British	Uknown
19	F	3	None	White British	1 st of 2
20	M	6	EAL	Pakistani	2 nd of 2

^{*} EAL= English as an Additional Language

Appendix L. The Initial 1068 Codes Identified from the Interview Transcripts

Acceptance	Acceptance of lack	Achievement for	Adjusting to a new
	of speech	child when he spoke	situation may
		1	because of SM
Advising parents	Against wrongly	Animated with	Anxious
	labelling child	friends	
Approachable to	Asked mother to	Assessment	Assessment by
parents	bring in Nepalese		observation left child
	books		disadvantages
Assessment	Assessment difficult	Assessment-	Attachment
challenging for EP		challenge	
Attachment- did not	Attachment- us	Attribute speaking to	Attributed speech to
take mutism		herself	child feeling relaxed
personally			
Autism training	Avoided looking at	Background	Became more
helpful	child directly	information helpful	accepting
Began speaking	Beh- Teacher relaxed	Behaviour support	Behaviour support
because sister joined	over year	provided advice	was helpful
school			
Behaviourist- made	Behaviourist	Believed child was in	Believed child was
recommendation to		control	petrified of adults
CAMHS			
Brought siblings into	BSO	BSO calmed mother	Built up trust
class			
Cannot spread herself	Cause may be child	Causes of SM may	Challenging
	was embarrassed	be that she was living	
	about deep voice	above a shop	
Change in child's	Change over time-	Changed strategy s	Cheeky
behaviour- form no	child became toilet	later gave choices	
speech to some	trained		
Child - good sense of	Child accidentally	Child aggression	Child an excellent
humour	spoke to teacher		team player
Child answered yes	Child anxious	Child banging on	Child became more
and no		door	comfortable over
			time
Child became more	Child began saying	Child began speaking	Child being able
confident over year	odd words	to peer in front of	helped teacher
	~	teacher	~ · · · · ·
Child below average	Child bubbly	Child clammed up	Child clever
academically	CI II I	when spoken to	CI II I
Child closed down in	Child sometimes	Child communicated	Child communicated
Maths	smiled	by facial expressions	more with TA than
Child -	Child - 1 1	Child - 1 1	teacher
Child communicated	Child communicated	Child copied	Child creative
with actions	with brother	C1 11 1 1	C1 11 1
Child cried on first	Child dependent on 1	Child does not cause	Child does not
day	boy	trouble but does not	communicate to go to
		do a lot.	the toilet

Child does not do a	Child embarrassed	Child embarrassed	Child expressionless
lot	about accent		
Child felt pressurised	Child frustrated	Child gave eye	Child gestured
		contact when wanted	
CI II I I	G1 11 1 1 1 CC 1	to communicate	
Child had core group	Child had difficulty	Child had no	Child had one
of friends	with independent work	academic issues	specific friend
Child had poor teeth	Child happy	Child initially had	Child initially
		one close friend	unresponsive
child is aware she	Child lack of overt	Child learned best by	Child learned by
was different	emotion	rote repetition	patterns
Child lied about speaking in school	Child more engaged during role play	Child more likely to engage in subjects when no wrong answer	Child more talkative in creative subjects
Child mouthed words	Child not appropriately placed in class, cannot access curriculum	Child not collected after school by parents	Child not shy
Child only spoke to girls	Child passive	Child paused a lot when conversing	Child poor in basic skills
CI II I	GI II I	with teacher	CI II I I III
Child pretended to talk	Child put hand up	Child read aloud	Child read to TA once
Child refused to use toilet	Child remained mute through the year	Child responsive to jokes	Child retreat into her shell
Child said greetings	Child scared	Child secluded	Child shy
Child smiled at	Child speaking	Child split up from	Child spoke in a
friends	linked to role identity	friendship group	louder voice with
		from previous year because over reliant on children	peers
Child spoke in a low	Child spoke in a	Child spoke in the	Child spoke more to
voice	quieter voice to adults	playground	TA than teacher
Child spoke only to	Child spoke over	Child spoke through	Child spoke to 1 peer
other children Child apply to adults	time Child spoke to TA	friend Child spoke to TA	Child analys to
Child spoke to adults	Child spoke to TA	Child spoke to TA out of school	Child spoke to teacher
before peers Child spoke when	Child sporty	Child stroked	Child struggled in
with those she trusted	Cimu sporty	teacher's back	Maths
Child tapped teacher	Child timid	Child touched	Child uncomfortable
cima tapped teacher	Cinia tillia	teacher's arm	about unknown
Child understood	Child unresponsive	Child used hand	Child using a type of
	to questioning	signals	sign language
Child very able	Child very polite	Child wanted to be	Child wanted to be
	ponto	the same as friends	treated equally
Child wants to not	Child was	Child was	Child was

have attention drawn on them	comfortable with peers	embarrassed to speak	expressionless
Child was incredibly self conscious	Child was patient	Child was quiet	Child waved to teacher
Child went unnoticed	Child wet himself	Child whispers to friend	Child will say routine things
Child with SM would not communicate with peer	Child with SM would not talk to peer	Child withdrawn	Child would lead adults to what he wanted
Child would mouth words	Child would not speak once entered school gate	Child would not speak to teacher	Child would not talk
Child would physically retreat	Child would shut down	Child would stop speaking when an adult was near	Child would try
Child wrote on whiteboard	Child's behaviour changed in Maths- more engaged	Child's behaviour did not change over time	Child's behaviour not changed over year
Child's body tensed	Child's communication increased over time	Child's communication increased throughout year	Child's communication remained the same throughout the year
Child's home life as a potential explanation of behaviour	Child's mother could speak and understand English well	Child's parents did not answer phone	Child's speech not distinguishable
Communicated important information for home through telling the child	Concern	Concern about the future	Concerned about child's home life
Concerned about strange videos displayed in family shop	Concerned about younger sibling's school absence	Concerned that cause of SM was problem at home	Concerned that family shop sold alcohol
Concerned that there strange people who entered the family shop	Conflicted about labelling	Conflicting advice	Contact with child's extended family
Control	Could not understand child's issues	CPD- training on ASD	Cried when child spoke
Cuddle	Curious (thoughts)	Daily communication with parents	Delighted verbal response
Developed better time management skills	Development of child's behaviour over year- from no speech to whispering	Development of emotions- began frustrated to understanding	Development of emotions- felt more positive towards the end
Development of emotions- less frustrated at end of	Development of emotions- more positive	Did not know why child was mute	Did not pressurise child to speak

Did not want to make it worse Did not want to single child out single chi	year			
Difficulty Difficulty managing different concerns of parents Directive language Discourage friend speaking for child Discovered child speak by overhearing him talking to mother Does not speak in front of teacher EAL training helpful transference EAL training helpful transference Encourage child to speak first language in class Encouraged child to omnunicate EP did a home visit mother which was helpful to teacher EP did a home visit mother which was helpful to be given some advice on ways of working with the child EP ran habituation programme EP role- takes weeks to get an answer if call up EP role- takes weeks to get an answer if call up Expectation of children to go up to and hug an adult Expectation that child would be like previous children but took longer to speak Expected child to be shy because sibling was shy Explaining behaviour Difficulty with communicating both parents simultaneously Discovered child to communication could speak by overhearing him talking to mother could speak by overhearing him talking to mother Drow on previous each parent Directive language Discovered child both parents simultaneously Discovered child communication Drow on previous experiences Empathy Encouraging child to support Emotional Empathy Encouraging child to support Encouraging child to speak EP diagnosis EP belp- practical tips EP help- programme EP modelled habituation programme EP role- facilitating statementing procedure EP role- takes weeks to get an answer if call up Expectation of children to go up to and hug an adult Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectation that child would speak Expectation that child would speak Expectations et by outside professionals Expectation that child would speak Expectation beta child would speak Expectation beta child working with solution of behaviour		Did not want to	Different interaction	Difficulties accessing
Difficulty different concerns of parents Directive language Directive language Discourage friend speaking for child Does not speak in front of teacher EAL training helpful transference Encourage child to speak first language in class Encourage child to point to communication point. EP did a home visit EP did a home visit EP helpful in providing a starting point. EP ran habituation programme EP ran habituation programme EP role- takes weeks to get an answer if call up Expectation of child would be like previous children but took longer to speak Expected child to be shy because sibling was shy Explaining behaviour Explaining behaviour Explaining behaviour Explaining behaviour Epticourage friend speaking for child communication bit communication tare simultaneously Discovered child communication bit prise could speak by overhearing him talking to mother Discovered child communication talking to mother Drew on previous each parent sumultaneously EAL resources as a support EAL resources as a support Encourage child to read books in first language Encourage child to speak first language Encourage joint communication transference Encourage child to speak experiences Epmathy Encouraging child to read books in first language Encouraging child to speak EP diagnosis EP diagnosis EP diagnosis EP help- practical tips EP help- practical tips EP help- practical tips EP help- practical tips EP nodelled habituation programme EP modelled habituation programme EP recommendation- to observe teachers and feedback to get an answer if call up Expectation of child would speak Expectation that child would speak Expectation that child would speak Expectation that child would speak Expectation but child would spe	it worse	single child out	level than teachers	information from
different concerns of parents Discourage friend speaking for child Discovered child could speak by overhearing him talking to mother	Difficulty	Difficulty managing	Difficulty with	. 1
Directive language Discourage friend speaking for child Does not speak in front of teacher EAL training helpful speak first language in class Encourage child to point to communicate EP did a home visit EP helpful in providing a starting point. EP ran habituation programme Expectation of children but took longer to speak Expectation that child would be like previous children but took longer to speak Expected child to be shy because sibling was shy Explaining behaviour Expendation that child was speak in front of teacher Expectation be a part of the procession and speak in front of back in first language Encourage child to expeak first language Encourage child to read books in first language Encourage child to speak in first language Encourage child to read books in first language Encouraging parents Ephal contact with mother which was helpful to teacher EP help- practical tips EP prode-lakes weeks from researcher EP role- facilitating statementing procedure EP role- takes weeks to get an answer if call up Expectation of children to go up to and hug an adult Expectation that child would speak Expectation behaviour Expectation that child would speak Expectation behaviour Expectation to behaviour Experiences EAL resources as a support Encourage child to mother En				_
Directive language Discourage friend speaking for child Discovered child could speak by overhearing him talking to mother EAL training helpful Emotional transference EAL training helpful Encourage joint communication in class Encourage child to speak first language in class Encouraged child to point to communicate EP helpful in providing a starting point. EP ran habituation programme EP role- takes weeks to get an answer if call up Expectation of children to go up to and hug an adult Expectation that child would be like previous children but took longer to speak Expected child to be given says of working with she child Expectation that child would be like previous children by seak Expected child to be given some some advice on ways of working with the child Expectation that child would be like previous children but took longer to speak Expected child to be given some some advice on ways of working with the child Expectation that child would be like previous children but took longer to speak Expected child to be shy because sibling was shy Explaining behaviour Expectation find brown the child brown the speak shy of working with SM Explaining behaviour Explaining behaviour Explaining behaviour Expectation for behavior Expectation child brown talking talking to mother rad book on previous child be behaviour Expectation hat child would speak Expectation child brown the speak Expectation child brown the child brown the child would speak Expectation child brown the child would speak Expectation that child would speak Expectation child brown the child working with SM Explanation for behavior Explanation for behavior Expectation the child brown the child working with SM Explanation for behavior Expectation the child to be shy because sibling working with SM Expectation the child to be shy because				
Directive language speaking for child speaking for child speak by overhearing him talking to mother front of teacher speak in front of teacher speak first language in class speak little spoint to communication speak speak speak speak speak speak first language in class speak		F ********		
speaking for child voverhearing him talking to mother Does not speak in front of teacher EAL training helpful transference Encourage child to speak first language in class Encouraged child to point to communicate EP did a home visit mother which was helpful to teacher EP helpful in providing a starting point. EP ran habituation programme EP role- takes weeks to get an answer if call up Expectation of children but took longer to speak Expectation that child would be like previous children but took longer to speak Expected child to be give pass shy Explaining behaviour Explaining behaviour Explaining behaviour Eproton of teacher Encourage child to exercine transference Empathy Encourage child to read support exaption experiences Encourage child to communication to communication Encourage child to speak Encourage child to speak Encourage child to read books in first language Encourage child to speak Encourage child to read books in first language Encourage child to speak Encourage child to read books in first language Encourage child to speak Encourage child to read books in first language Encourage child to speak Encourage child to read books in first language Encourage child to speak Encourage child to read books in first language Encourage child to speak Encourage child to Encourage parts Encourage child to read books in first language Encourage child to speak Encourage child to Encourage child to read books in first language Encourage child to read books in first language Encourage child to Encourage child to read books in first language Encourage child to read books in first language Encourage child to read books in first language Encourage child to Encourage child to read books in first language Encourage child to speak EP diagnosis EP diagnosis	Directive language	Discourage friend		Discrepancy between
Does not speak in front of teacher EAL training helpful		_	could speak by	
Drew on previous experiences EAL resources as a support			overhearing him	behaviour
Front of teacher EAL training helpful Encourage child to speak first language in class Encouraged child to point to communicate EP did a home visit EP helpful in providing a starting point. EP ran habituation programme EP role- takes weeks to get an answer if call up EP role- takes weeks to get an answer if call up Expectation of children to go up to and hug an adult Expectation that child would be like previous children but took longer to speak Expected child to be given says because sibling was shy Explaining behaviour Explaining behaviour Expectation of Experience useful Explaining behaviour Expectation for beh- Explaining behaviour Encourage child to read books in first language Encouraging child to read books in first language Encourage child to read books in first language Encourage child to read books in first language Encourage child to read books in first language Encouraging child to speak Encouraging parents Encouraging parents Encouraging parents Encouraging child to speak Encouraging parents Encouraging child to speak Encouraging parents Encouraging child to speak Encouraging child to speak Encouraging parents Encouraging parents Encouraging child to speak Encouraging parents Encouraging child to speak Encouraging parents Encouraging child to speak EP dia gnosis EP did a great job Endol great job Endol great job Endol great job EP help- practical tips EP help- practical tips EP nelp- practical EP help- practical EP help- practical EP relp-			talking to mother	
Encourage child to speak first language in class Encourage child to speak first language in class Encourage child to point to communicate EP did a home visit EP had contact with mother which was helpful to teacher EP helpful in providing a starting point. EP ran habituation programme EP role- takes weeks to get an answer if call up Expectation of children to go up to and hug an adult Expectation that child would be like previous children but took longer to speak Expected child to be shy because sibling was shy Encourage child to read books in first language Encouraging child to speak EP did a great job EP help- practical tips tips EP modelled habituation programme EP recommendation- to observe teachers and feedback EP recommendation- to observe teachers and feedback EP role- facilitating statementing procedure EP role- facilitating statementing procedure EP role- facilitating statementing procedure Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectation set by outside professionals Expectation set by outside professionals Experience was challenging working with SM child useful	Does not speak in	Draw pictures	Drew on previous	EAL resources as a
transference Encourage child to speak first language in class Encouraged child to point to communicate EP did a home visit EP helpful to teacher EP helpful in providing a starting point. EP ran habituation programme EP ran habituation programme EP role- takes weeks to get an answer if call up Expectation of children to go up to and hug an adult Expectation that child would be like previous children but took longer to speak Expected child to be syne because sibling was shy Encourage joint communicate speak Encouraging child to speak Encouraging parents speak Encouraging child to speak in Encouraging parents speak Encouraging child to speak EP did a great job suggest tips EP help- practical tips EP help- practical tips EP modelled habituation programme EP modelled habituation programme EP recommendation- to observe teachers and feedback procedure EP rele- facilitating statementing procedure EP recommendation- to observe teachers and feedback procedure EP role- takes weeks to get an answer if call up Expectation of child will forget and speak Expectation that child would be like previous children but took longer to speak Expectation to speak Expectation that child would speak Expectation but took longer to speak Expected child to be shy because sibling was shy Explaning behaviour Encouraging child to speak it into speak EP diagnosis EP did a great job tips EP help- practical tips EP recommendation- to observe teachers and feedback procedure EP recommendation- to observe teachers and feedback procedure EP recommendation- to observe teachers and feedback procedure Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectations that child won't speak Expectations et by outside professionals Expectation that child wor't speak Expectation that child wor't speak Expect				
Encourage child to speak first language in class Encouraged child to point to communicate Encouraged child to point to communicate EP did a home visit EP had contact with mother which was helpful to teacher EP helpful in providing a starting point. EP involvement would have been useful to be given some advice on ways of working with the child EP ran habituation programme EP role- takes weeks to get an answer if call up Expectation of children to go up to and hug an adult Expectation that child would be like previous children but took longer to speak Expected child to be speak Expected child to be speak Expected child to be speak Expected child to be speak Expectation gross as helpful to teacher special with the child special would be like previous children but took longer to speak Expectation gross as helpful to teacher special with the child would speak expectation beta child would speak expectation gross as helpful to teacher and feedback and hug an adult expectation that child would speak expectation that child would speak expectations because sibling was shy Expectation beta child would speak expectation for behaviour explanation-lack of explanation-lack of explanation-Child Explanation for behaviour experiments speak expectation for behaviour expension speak expectation for child useful explanation for behaviour	EAL training helpful		Empathy	
Encourage child to speak first language in class Encouraged child to point to communicate EP did a home visit EP did a home visit EP helpful in providing a starting point. EP ran habituation programme EP role- takes weeks to get an answer if call up Expectation of children to go up to and hug an adult Expectation that child would be like previous children but took longer to speak Encouraged child to speak Encouraging child to speak EP dia gnosis EP dia gnosis EP dia great job EP help- practical tips EP help- practical tips EP modelled habituation programme EP modelled habituation programme EP romodelled habituation programme EP recommendation-to observe teachers and feedback to get an answer if call up Expectation of children to go up to and hug an adult Expectation that child would be like previous children but took longer to speak Expectation that child would speak Expected child to be speak Expected child to be speak Expected child to to be given some advice on ways of working with the child would speak Expectation that child would speak Expectation that child would be like previous children but took longer to speak Expectation that child would speak Expected child to be shy because sibling was shy Encouraging child to speak EP dia great job EP diagnosis EP help- practical tips EP romodelled habituation programme EP rocommendation-to observe teachers and feedback procedure EP role- facilitating statementing procedure Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectations Callenging Working with SM Child useful		transference		
Speak first language in class End of year child spoke a little EP diagnosis EP did a great job				
EP did a home visit EP helpful in providing a starting point. EP ran habituation programme EP role- takes weeks to get an answer if call up Expectation of exhildren to go up to and hug an adult Expectation that child would be like previous children but took longer to speak Expectation get on keys of working wits working was shy Explaining behaviour ER did a home visit EP had contact with mother which was helpful to teacher EP help- practical tips EP help- practical tips EP help- practical tips EP help- practical tips EP nodelled habituation programme EP modelled habituation programme EP recommendation- to observe teachers and feedback procedure EP recommendation- to observe teachers and feedback previous children but took longer to speak Expectation that child would speak Expectation that child would speak Expectation that child would speak Expectation to be speak Expectation behaviour Explaining behaviour EP dia a great job EP help- practical tips EP nodelled habituation programme EP rode-fled will agreat job EP help- practical tips EP nodelled habituation programme EP rode-fled willensing EP role-facilitating statementing procedure EP role-facilitating statementing Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectations children but child would speak Expectations children but child would speak Expectations children but child will forget and speak Expectations children but child will forget and speak Expec	<u> </u>	O S		Encouraging parents
Encouraged child to point to communicate EP did a home visit EP had contact with mother which was helpful to teacher EP helpful in providing a starting point. EP ran habituation programme EP role- takes weeks to get an answer if call up Expectation of children to go up to and hug an adult Expectation that child would be like previous children but took longer to speak Expected child to be given child would be like previous children but took longer to speak Expectationing behaviour Explaining behaviour End of year child spoke a little EP help- practical tips EP nodelled habituation programme EP rocommendation to observe teachers and feedback procedure EP recommendation to observe teachers and feedback procedure Expectation of speak Expectation of speak Expectation that child would speak Experience useful Explanation-lack of Explanation-Child EP did a great job EP help- practical tips EP help- practical EP nodelled habituation programme EP role- facilitating statementing procedure Expectation that child will forget and schild woll forget and schild woll forget and schild woll woll woll woll woll will be expectations child woll forget and schild woll forget and schild woll forget and		communication	speak	
point to communicate Spoke a little EP did a home visit EP had contact with mother which was helpful to teacher EP involvement would have been useful to be given some advice on ways of working with the child EP ran habituation programme EP role- takes weeks to get an answer if call up Expectation of children to go up to and hug an adult Expectation that child would be like previous children but look longer to speak Expectated child to be shy because sibling was shy Explanation - lack of Explanation - lack o		E 1 C 1'11	ED 1'	ED 111
EP helpful in mother which was helpful to teacher EP helpful in providing a starting point. EP nan habituation programme EP ran habituation programme EP role- takes weeks to get an answer if call up Expectation of children to go up to and hug an adult Expectation that child would be like previous children but look longer to speak Expected child to be shy because sibling was shy EP help- practical tips EP help- practical tips EP help- practical tips EP modelled habituation programme EP romodelled habituation programme EP recommendation-to observe teachers and feedback provide the provide			EP diagnosis	EP did a great job
mother which was helpful to teacher EP helpful in providing a starting point. EP involvement would have been useful to be given some advice on ways of working with the child EP ran habituation programme EP rocommendation-therapy (CBT) EP role- takes weeks to get an answer if call up Expectation of children to go up to and hug an adult Expectation that child would be like previous children but took longer to speak Expected child to be shy because sibling was shy mother which was helpful to teacher EP involvement would have been useful to be given some advice on ways of working with the child EP romodelled habituation programme EP rocommendation-to observe teachers and feedback procedure EP role- takes weeks to get an answer if call up Expectation of children to go up to and hug an adult Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectation that child would speak Expectations that child would speak Expectation that child would speak Expectations expectations of working with SM child useful Explaining behaviour EP role-facilitating statementing procedure EP role-facilitating statementing procedure Expectation that child expectation that child will forget and speak Expectation that child would speak Expectations expectations expectations expectations set by outside professionals Expectation that child would speak Experience was challenging working with SM child useful		1	ED 1-1	ED 1-1- 41-1-
helpful to teacher EP helpful in providing a starting point. EP involvement would have been useful to be given some advice on ways of working with the child EP ran habituation programme EP ran habituation programme EP role- takes weeks to get an answer if call up Expectation of children to go up to and hug an adult Expectation that child would be like previous children but took longer to speak Expected child to be shy because sibling was shy EP involvement would have been useful epi nodelled habituation programme EP modelled habituation programme EP modelled habituation programme EP recommendation-to observe teachers and feedback procedure EP recommendation-to observe teachers and feedback procedure Ethics- sought info from researcher Expectation that child will forget and speak child wolf speak Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectations et by outside professionals Expectations et by outside professionals Experience useful Experience was challenging working with SM child useful Explanation- Child Explanation for beh-	EP did a nome visit			
EP helpful in providing a starting point. EP involvement would have been useful to be given some advice on ways of working with the child EP ran habituation programme EP recommendation-therapy (CBT) EP role- takes weeks to get an answer if call up Expectation of children to go up to and hug an adult Expectation that child would be like previous children but took longer to speak Expected child to be shy because sibling was shy EP involvement would have been useful EP modelled habituation programme EP modelled habituation programme EP modelled habituation programme EP recommendation-to observe teachers and feedback previous child with the child will never put hand up Expectation that child will forget and speak changed outside professionals changed Expectations et by challenging working with SM child useful Explanation- lack of Explanation- Child Explanation for beh-			ups	ups
providing a starting point. Would have been useful to be given some advice on ways of working with the child EP ran habituation programme EP ran habituation therapy (CBT) EP role- takes weeks to get an answer if call up Expectation of children to go up to and hug an adult Expectation that child would be like previous children but took longer to speak Expected child to be shy because sibling was shy would have been useful to be given some advice on ways of working with the child to be some advice on ways of working with the child with took longer to speak Expected child to be shy because sibling was shy Explanation-lack of Explanation-Child Explanation for beh-	ED halpful in		ED modelled	ED observation
point. Separation of children to go up to and hug an adult				Li obscivation
some advice on ways of working with the child EP ran habituation programme EP recommendation-therapy (CBT) EP role- takes weeks EP was very good Ethics- sought info from researcher Expectation of children to go up to and hug an adult Expectation that child would be like previous children but took longer to speak Expected child to be shy because sibling was shy EP role- facilitating statementing procedure EP role- facilitating statementing procedure Expectation to observe teachers and feedback Expectation of Ethics- sought info from researcher Expectation that child will never put hand up Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectation that child would speak Expectations that child would speak Expectations Expectations Expectations set by outside professionals Expected child to be shy because sibling was shy Explaining behaviour EP role- facilitating statementing procedure Expectation that child will never put hand up Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectations Expectations Expectations set by outside professionals Expectation that child would speak Experience was challenging working with SM child useful Explanation- Child Explanation for beh-	1			
of working with the child EP ran habituation programme EP role- takes weeks to get an answer if call up Expectation of children to go up to and hug an adult Expectation that child would be like previous children but took longer to speak Expected child to be shy because sibling was shy EP role- manufaction to observe teachers and feedback EP role- facilitating statementing procedure EP role- facilitating statementing procedure Expectation to observe teachers and feedback Expectation for thick observe teachers and feedback Expectation of Expectation that child will never put hand up Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectation that child would speak Expectation that child would speak Expectations that child would speak Expectation that child would speak Experience useful Experience was challenging working with SM child useful Explanation- Child Explanation for beh-	point.		programme	
EP ran habituation programme EP recommendation-therapy (CBT) EP role-takes weeks to get an answer if call up Expectation of children to go up to and hug an adult Expectation that child would be like previous children but took longer to speak Expected child to be shy because sibling was shy EP role-facilitating statementing procedure EP role-takes weeks to observe teachers and feedback EP role-facilitating statementing procedure Expectation for betained to observe teachers and feedback Expectation thinform researcher Expectation that child will never put hand up Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectations Expectations Expectations outside professionals Expectation but child would speak Expected child to be shy because sibling was shy Explaining behaviour Explanation-lack of Explanation-Child Explanation for beh-		•		
programme therapy (CBT) to observe teachers and feedback procedure EP role- takes weeks to get an answer if call up Expectation of children to go up to and hug an adult Expectation that child would be like previous children but took longer to speak Expected child to be shy because sibling was shy therapy (CBT) to observe teachers and feedback procedure Ethics- sought info from researcher will never put hand up Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectation that child would speak changed outside professionals Expected child to be shy because sibling was shy Explaining behaviour Explanation- lack of Explanation- Child Explanation for behaviour		_		
EP role- takes weeks to get an answer if call up Expectation of children to go up to and hug an adult Expectation that child would be like previous children but took longer to speak Expected child to be shy because sibling was shy EP was very good Ethics- sought info from researcher will never put hand up Expectation of child will forget and speak Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectation that child won't speak Expectation that child would speak Expectations changed Expectations set by outside professionals Experience was challenging working with SM child useful Explanation- lack of Explanation- Child Explanation for beh-	EP ran habituation	Ep recommendation-	EP recommendation-	EP role- facilitating
EP role- takes weeks to get an answer if call up Expectation of children to go up to and hug an adult Expectation that child would be like previous children but took longer to speak Expected child to be shy because sibling was shy EP was very good from researcher will never put hand up Expectation of speak from researcher Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectation that child won't speak Expectations set by outside professionals Experience was challenging working with SM child useful Explanation- lack of Explanation- Child Explanation for beh-	programme	therapy (CBT)	to observe teachers	statementing
to get an answer if call up Expectation of children to go up to and hug an adult Expectation that child would be like previous children but took longer to speak Expected child to be shy because sibling was shy Explaining behaviour Expectation of sexpectation of speech child will forget and speak Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectations that child will forget and speak Expectations that child won't speak Expectations set by outside professionals Experience was challenging working with SM child useful Explanation- Child Explanation for beh-			and feedback	procedure
call up Expectation of children to go up to and hug an adult Expectation that child would be like previous children but took longer to speak Expected child to be shy because sibling was shy Expectation of speak in the profession of speak in the profession of speak in the profession of child would speak in the profession of shy because sibling was shy Experience useful in the profession of speak in the profession of shy because sibling was shy in the profession of speak i	EP role- takes weeks	EP was very good	Ethics- sought info	Expectation child
Expectation of children to go up to and hug an adult Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectation that child would speak Expectations set by outside professionals Expectations set by outside professionals Expected child to be shy because sibling was shy Experience useful Experience was challenging working with SM child useful Explanation-lack of Explanation-Child Explanation for beh-			from researcher	will never put hand
children to go up to and hug an adult Expectation that child would be like previous children but took longer to speak Expected child to be shy because sibling was shy Explaining behaviour speech child will forget and speak Expectation that child would speak Expectations challenging child won't speak Expectations set by outside professionals changed Experience was challenging child won't speak Expectations set by outside professionals experience was challenging child won't speak Expectations set by outside professionals experience was challenging child won't speak Expectations set by outside professionals experience was challenging Experience sof working with SM child useful Explanation- Child Explanation for beh-				
and hug an adult Expectation that child would be like previous children but took longer to speak Expected child to be shy because sibling was shy Explaining behaviour Expectation that child would speak changed Expectations changed outside professionals changed Expectations set by outside professionals Experience was challenging working with SM child useful Explaination-lack of Explanation-Child Explanation for beh-		_	_	
Expectation that child would be like previous children but took longer to speak Expected child to be shy because sibling was shy Experience useful Experience useful Experience was challenging working with SM child useful Expectations set by outside professionals Experience was challenging working with SM child useful Explanation-lack of Explanation-Child Explanation for beh-		speech	_	child won't speak
child would be like previous children but took longer to speak Expected child to be shy because sibling was shy Explaining behaviour Child would speak changed outside professionals changed Experience was challenging working with SM child useful Explanation- lack of Explanation- Child Explanation for behaviour		E-marketia di d		E-marketia (1
previous children but took longer to speak Expected child to be shy because sibling was shy Explaining behaviour Explanation-lack of Explanation-Child Explanation-Child Explanation-Child Explanation-Child Explanation-Incomparison of the short of				
took longer to speak Expected child to be shy because sibling was shy Experience useful Experience was challenging working with SM child useful Explaining behaviour Explanation-lack of Explanation-Child Explanation for behavior		cima would speak	changed	outside professionals
Expected child to be shy because sibling was shy Experience useful Experience was challenging working with SM child useful Explaining behaviour Explanation-lack of Explanation-Child Explanation for beh-	_ _			
shy because sibling was shy challenging challenging working with SM child useful Explaining behaviour Explanation-lack of Explanation-Child Explanation for beh-		Experience useful	Experience was	Experiences of
was shychild usefulExplaining behaviourExplanation-lack ofExplanation-ChildExplanation for beh-	_	Experience userui	_	-
Explaining behaviour Explanation- lack of Explanation- Child Explanation for beh-				
	•	Explanation- lack of	Explanation- Child	
	to peers		was laughed at	new setting

Explanation- anxiety	Explanation- anxiety	Explanation-	Explanation- avoid
	and phobia	attention seeking	forming relationships
Explanation- being	Explanation- child	Explanation- child	Explanation- child
rewarded for not	afraid to talk	couldn't help it	had contextualised
speaking		1	attitudes
Explanation- child	Explanation- child	Explanation- child	Explanation- child
may be conscious of	may have been on the	unhappy	was self-conscious
Nepalese accent	ASD spectrum	117	
Explanation control	Explanation- control	Explanation- control	Explanation- cultural
1		and manipulation	differences
Explanation- didn't	Explanation- didn't	Explanation- didn't	Explanation- doesn't
know how to start	like sound of his	want to speak in case	know how to break
talking again	voice	said the wrong thing	cycle of beh
Explanation- doesn't	Explanation -early	Explanation- early	Explanation-
want to let people	negative childhood	experience, told to be	emotional
down	experience	quiet	transference from
	1		anxious parents
Explanation-	Explanation-	Explanation- fear	Explanation- for
expectations would	experiencing trauma	1	protection
change			
Explanation- getting	Explanation- habit	Explanation- hide	Explanation- home
one over		away	impact on school
Explanation- initially	Explanation- lack of	Explanation- lack of	Explanation- linked
staff reinforced	confidence	social skills	with EAL
mutism by not			
expecting speech			
Explanation- low	Explanation- mother	Explanation- mutism	Explanation- mutism
self-esteem	exacerbated	habit	related to comfort
	condition		level of child
Explanation- mutism	Explanation- New	Explanation- not	Explanation- not
triggered by an	setting	child's fault	speaking is a default
incident			position
Explanation of	Explanation- parental	Explanation- pattern	Explanation-
sibling's behaviour as	separation	of reluctant	physical contact
imitating child's		interaction with male	related to child's
		teachers	speech
Explanation-	Explanation- purpose	Explanation- purpose	Explanation- quiet
protection	of mutism to be	of mutism to be	sibling gave a clue
	anonymous	invisible	about SM child
Explanation- realised	Explanation requires	Explanation- safety	Explanation- security
subconsciously	investigation into		
	home life		
Explanation- self-	Explanation- shyness	Explanation- siblings	Explanation- speech
conscious of deep		spoke for child	related to knowing
voice		_	adult
Explanation- strong	Explanation-	Explanation- teeth	Explanation- to avoid
shyness	survival, way of	removed	answering questions
	coping		about family
Explanation- trauma	Explanation- trauma	Explanation- worried	Explanation- worried
· · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · ·			

of first day in school	of moving school	about people's	people will laugh
		responses	
Explanation- worried	Explanation-	Exploring	Extended family
about getting	awareness of lower		wouldn't enter school
approval	academic abilities		grounds
Eye contact	Facial expressions	Fairness	Familiarity with
			parents outside of school
Father had fallen	Father was half	Feedback from	Feel protective
asleep	dressed	parents	
Feelings-	Feelings towards	Feelings- would have	Felt a sense of
disappointment	child didn't change	been more concerned	achievement
		if child was	
		underachieving	
Felt amazed when child spoke	Felt angry at parent	Felt- Apprehension lessened	Felt apprehensive
Felt apprehensive	Felt awkward	Felt challenged	Felt concern about
		C .	how child would
			cope
Felt concerned	Felt concerned about	Felt confused by the	Felt daunted
	assessment	child's behaviour	
Felt determined	Felt empathic	Felt enthusiastic	Felt excited
Felt frustrated	Felt frustrated at	Felt frustrated	Felt frustrated for
	mother because	because child getting	child
	wouldn't listen to her	conflicting messages	
Felt good	Felt good for child	Felt good for him	Felt guilt
Felt guilty	Felt happy to have	Felt heartbroken	Felt hopeful (for
	child in her class		speech)
Felt inadequate	Felt interactions were	Felt interested	Felt interested
	difficult		initially
Felt intrigued	Felt irritated at lack	Felt it was an	Felt it was difficult
	of knowledge	achievement for child	
Felt it was hard work	Felt like a failure	Felt limited in her	Felt nice to be trusted
		teaching ability	
Felt no frustration	Felt nurturing	Felt obligation to	Felt overwhelmed
	_	help	
Felt panicked	Felt pleased for child	Felt pleased when	Felt positive
		child spoke	
Felt pressured	Felt pride	Felt professional	Felt proud when
	-	opinion was less	child spoke
		respected	_
Felt really bad	Felt really nice to	Felt relived when	Felt responsible
	hear child speak	child spoke	
Felt responsible (for	Felt responsible for	Felt rewarded	Felt selfish
child's lack of	putting child back		
progress)			
Felt stretched	Felt sympathetic over	Felt teacher	Felt unprepared from
	time	counsellor cared less	teacher training
		for child	i

Felt unprepared	Felt unsupported	Felt unsure	Felt unworried
Felt uplifted when	Felt uptight	Felt valued	Felt warmth towards
child spoke			child
Felt worried	Felt worried about	Few facial	Few gestures
	workload	expressions	
Filled out a child	Find out interests	Felt inadequate	Frustrated at mother
protection form			
Frustrated because	Frustrated for child	Frustrated that child	Frustration
couldn't get through		reverted to mutism	
to mother		the next year	
Frustration extended	Frustration working	Function of	Future expectation-
when ceased teaching	with SALT	behaviour to avoid	more realistic
child		participation	
Future experiences-	Future experiences-	Future- may need to	Future- would be
less expectation of	more patient	be more reflective of	more confident
speech		practice	
Gave child cards	Gentle giant	Giggle	Giving advice to
			teachers
Giving time for child	Good communication	Good relationship	Got used to Mutism-
to answer	with mother	with parents	it was OK
Gradual removal of	Gradually increased	Group work a	Had a soft spot for
strategies	physical proximity	challenge for child	child
Happy child	He's got a nice sense	Help from an EP	Helpful- Better
	of humour.	would have been	understanding of
		appreciated	reasons for mutism
Helpful- internet	Home assessment	Hopeful when child	Hum
		showed signs of pre-	
		speech	
I don't think it's any	If taught in future	If we ask her a	Ignored child
more different than	remain hopeful	question then she'll	
that, it just makes		give a gentle nod.	
you more aware.			
Ignoring goes against	Ignoring the child	Impact of behaviour	Impact on feelings if
wishes	helped them	on speaking and	taught SM child in
		listening tasks	the future- unsure
Importance of	Inclusive strategy	Increased	Increased
background		communication over	communication
information		time	related to increased
			integration
Increased in	Information passed	Information sharing	Informed long term
confidence over time	over from Nursery	with parents	about child
Initial expectation of	Initial training-	initially anticipated it	Initially believed that
speech	PGCE	to be challenging	child couldn't speak
Initially child did not	Initially closed body	Initially unsure of	Insight impacted on
communicate	language from child,	cause	teaching strategy
	became more relaxed		
Intelligent	Interest	Interesting	Introducing child
			with SM to another
			Nepalese child

Investigating	It was a matter of me going online and looking up.	Know when a child is uncomfortable	Labelling
Labelling- a positive	Lack of clarity as to child's speech status	Lack of time to work 1 to 1 with child	Lack of understanding regarding cause of SM
Language barrier in communicating with parents	Leading adults	Less strategies used over time	Like a marionette puppet
Limited role	Limited speech from child	Little contact with child's parents	Little contact with parents
Long term good relationship with parents	Long term interest in child's welfare	Lots of information to read- lack of time	Low ability child
Low priority when spoke to SENCo	Made a family book	Made a fuss of child and made him withdraw more	Mediating factor- previous experience (lack of)
Mediating through a child	Mini-cards	Minimising choices	More able child
More adaptable	More engaged in tactile activities	More extreme teaching	More talking to parents in Reception
More than just a teacher	Mother felt criticised	Mother frustrated	Mother nagged child to speak
Mother not too concerned	Mother perceived as not being able to do much	Mother very anxious	Mother very involved
Mother was worried	Motivation- initially wanted to hear child speak	Mute because teeth removed	Mutism consistent in all subjects
Nice lad	NNEB	No advice	No communication from child
No communication with peers	No connection between siblings	No contact with parents	No expectation of additional support for child
No expectation of speech	No eye contact with peers	No feedback from child was a struggle	No feedback from social services regarding application of child protection papers
No integration from child's extended family	No speech	Nodding	Noisy at home
Non-verbal communication went on for a term	Non-verbal joking- child would pull faces	Not concerned about child	Not draw attention to child
Not frustrating	Not informed of from social services what happened	Not make a fuss	Not talk to adults

Not useful to have lots of reading materials	Nothing much gets done until later down the line	Nursery setting	One main friend
One word reply to	One word responses	Other children	Other pupils don't
teacher		prioritised	expect speech
Parallel play with peers	Parent bossy	Parent engaged	Parent expectation that child would grow out of it.
Parent frustrated	Parent insistent for child to speak at school	Parent more concerned when child in school	Parent not doing what was asked in school
Parent put pressure on child to speak	Parent relieved	Parent verbally aggressive	Parental separation
Parents believed it was a phase	Parents did not attend parent's evening	Parent's evening	Parents open
Parents pleased with progress	Parents potentially anxious about being judged	Parent's reaction- surprise that child didn't speak in school	Parents worried- fear of labelling
Partner work	Passing on knowledge	Peer expectations	Peer's acceptance
Peers as	Perceived child as	Perceived child felt	Perceived everyone
intermediaries	patient	exposed	in school as friendly
Perceived everyone	Perceived that child	Perception - child	Perception of child-
in school as open Perception of self not	goes unnoticed Perception of self-	was lovely Perception that child	intelligent Perceived to be
a specialist	don't know anything really	viewed her as an ally	putting pressure on child
Pictures	Pictures for the whole class	Pity	Play Therapist
Point	Pointing	Pointing to picture cards	Poor eye contact
Positive descriptions of child- lovely boy	Positive experience	Positive feeling	Positive response from child
Positive thought- training for all	Practical recommendations-accessing resources	Practical recommendations- EP as intermediary	Practical recommendations-strategies
Precious time with EP	Pressure from parents	Pretend child is invisible	Previous experience
Previous knowledge of child	Pride	Prior knowledge	Priorities changed
Prolonged awareness and involvement with child	Prolonged contact with parent	Promoting assertive skills	Push children to their full capabilities
Questioning child's ear	Quiet child	Quite academic	Raise hand
Reactions of peers- gasp	Reassured parents	Received training to reduce anxiety	Recollection
Recollections	Recommendationable to email an EP	Recommendation- advice on strategies	Recommendation- centralised

			community
Recommendation-	Recommendation-	Recommendation-	Recommendation-
clarity on process of	EP to review more	explanation and	explanation of
diagnosis	often child's progress	information	potential causes
Recommendation-	Recommendation	Recommendation-	Recommendation-
explanations	from EP- more info	guidance	INSET
Recommendation-	Recommendation-	Recommendation of	Recommendation-
more support in class	more training on	EPs- observe TAs	reassurance
	special education		
Recommendation-	Recommendation-	Recommendation-	Recommendation-
SEN courses	someone to call for	support service	teacher training
	advice		lectures on
			communication
			disorders
Recommendation-	Recommendation-	Recommendations-	Recommendations
training from EP	updates on SEN	Ed Psych to give	from EP are nor
	policies	pointers	surprising
Recommendations-	Recommendations-	Relationship	Relied on home
more time with EP	psychological advice	breakdown of parents	assessments initially
Researched SM	Role- accepting	Role- become more	Role- did not want to
		insightful	appear to select one
			particular child for
			special treatment
Role- educating	Role- enabling child	Role- expect too	Role identity- more
others	to communicate in a	much of herself	assertive and firm
	range of ways		with staff
Role identity-	Role- increased	Role- investigator	Role- less
mothering	awareness		professional
Role- mentoring	Role- more attentive	Role- more flexible	Role- more
	to non-verbal		knowledgeable
D 1	communication	D 1 1 1	D. I.
Role- more patient	Role- more	Role- more relaxed	Role- nurturing
D 1 CED	protective	approach	D 1 11 1
Role of EP-	Role of EP-	Role- priorities	Role- problem solver
facilitated referral	intermediary	changed	
process	D 1 (1	0 1	G C 4
Role- teacher was	Role- to reduce	Sad	Safety
also SENCo	child's stress	CALT muovidad	CAIT marrided
SALT	SALT involvement	SALT provided advice	SALT provided
Sat child next to TA	Satisfaction when		recommendations Self achievement
Sat child hext to 1A		School Ed Psych fantastic	Sen acmevement
SENCo- delivered	child spoke SENCo delivered	SENCo- provided	SENCo- provided
habituation		literature	teacher with
	habituation approach	niciature	published literature
programme SENCo ran	SENCo- ran social	SENCo researched	SENCo- spoke to
habituation	skills group	condition and	people in LA
	skins group	provided more info	people III LA
programme SENCo supportive	SENCo- supportive	•	Set child back
SENCo supportive	SERICO- Supportive	SENCo- training	Set child back

	and feeds back from		
	courses	G110.1	G11.11
Shake head	Shared teaching plans with TA	Shift in attitude	Sibling communicated softly
Sibling- confident	Sibling had a wider vocabulary	Sibling led adults	Sibling- limited eye
C'1-1'	-	C'1-1'1	contact
Sibling pointed	Sibling responsive	Sibling shy	Sibling speaks more
Sibling took a long	Sibling very low	Sibling very quiet	Sibling was a bit
time to be confident	academically	Cibling mould inle	bossy Sibling would smile
Sibling was also	Sibling was quietly	Sibling- would joke	Sibling- would smile
mute	spoken	once got to know you	C'1-1'11
Sibling-no eye	Sibling's	Siblings infer	Sibling's speech was
contact	communication fine	emotions	not good
Sliding in technique was effective	SM as a protection	SM to allow child to be invisible	Smiled at child
Smiling	Social services- no follow up	Sought background information on child	Speaking to the child was effective for transmitting information home
Special needs	Specialist Literacy teacher	Spoke in playground	Spoke to child
Spoke to peers	Spoke to peers but hit and miss	Spoke to sibling	Spoke to teacher
Spoke to teacher in	spoke words	Sponatenous initial	Spontaneous speech
front of parents		speech	
Strategy- prepared	Strategy- told child	Strategy- to remove	Strategies did not
child	to be quiet	parent because	change over time
		jeopardised approach	
Strategies- handover	Strategies-	Strategy - sliding in	Strategy - sliding in
with child's next	negotiation, if and	technique	technique including
teacher	then statements		boys in group
Strategy - to increase	Strategy- act natural	Strategy- additional	Strategy aimed at
child's confidence	when child spoke	TA support	whole class level
Strategy- alternative	Strategy and role	Strategy- apply	Strategy- asked
means of	identity training for	techniques from ASD	friends how they
communicating	next teacher	training	communicated with child
Strategy- avoided eye	Strategy- became	Strategy- called	Strategy- cards
contact otherwise	more persistent over	home to ask what he	
child would not	time	knew	
speak			
Strategy- careful	Strategy changed-	Strategy changed	Strategy changed
pairing	expected more	over time	over time- stopped
	speech over time		trying to trick ch
Strategy- child seated	Strategy- child to	Strategy- child wrote	Strategy- consistent
behin teacher	raise hand	it down	approach
Strategy- contacted	Strategy- created an	Strategy- created	Strategy- creating a
previous school	IPPP	pictures for him	safe learning
			environment

Strategy- did not expect speech	Strategy- differentiation	Strategy- discouraged friend from speaking for child	Strategy- discouraged peers speaking for child
Strategy- double teaching	Strategy- drew on previous experiences	Strategy- EEL	Strategy- eliciting monosyllabic answers
Strategy- enabled child to stay after school to play games in classroom	Strategy- encouraged child to point	Strategy- encouraged child to speak to sibling	Strategy- encouraged child to whisper to friend
Strategy- encouraged non-verbal communication	Strategy- encouraging	Strategy- engaged with child during play	Strategy- encouraged child to give answer to friend
Strategy- established a safe environment	Strategy exacerbated behaviour	Strategy- excluding parent	Strategy- expand on child's ideas
Strategy- expected speech	Strategy- extra encouragement	Strategy- extra playtime for child when went into next class	Strategy- extra praise
Strategy- facilitating dev of attachments	Strategy- feelings cards	Strategy- gave child jobs or responsibilities	Strategy- gave child parts that didn't require speech
Strategy- gave child small targets	Strategy- gentle approach	Strategy- gentle persuasion	Strategy- good communication with parents
Strategy- google	Strategy- got parents in to read to child	Strategy- Gradually added words to gestures	Strategy- group work
Strategy- guided child to gentler children	Strategy- habituation	Strategy- had to become more patient	Strategy- highlighted child's strengths
Strategy- home visit	Strategy- incorporated social activities	Strategy- instructed staff not to put pressure on the child to speak	Strategy- instructed staff to act normal when child spoke
Strategy- internet	Strategy- IPPP	Strategy- kept child in familiar surroundings	Strategy- lip read
Strategy made child cry	Strategy made child more shy	Strategy- make allowances but these are limited	Strategy- make child feel at ease talking
Strategy- memory games	Strategy- met with previous teacher	Strategy- met with SALT	Strategy- modelled for children preferred responses
Strategy- modelling	Strategy- more observant	Strategy- more thinking time	Strategy- mother came into school
Strategy- non-verbal communication-	Strategy not always effective	Strategy- not draw attention to child	Strategy not effective

thumbs up			
Strategy- not ot make a big issue	Strategy- not too much eye contact	Strategy- nurturing approach	Strategy- observations to inform assessment
Strategy- offering non-verbal responses during registration	Strategy- pair work	Strategy- pairing effective	Strategy- parallel play
Strategy- peer mentors	Strategy- pick child to answer questions that had short answers	Strategy- pointing	Strategy- praise
Strategy- presented info visually	Strategy- prioritised child answering questions	Strategy- prompting child	Strategy- prompting through questioning
Strategy- provide choices	Strategy- provided choices	Strategy- providing roles and responsibilities	Strategy- pushed child
Strategy- questioning to elicit understanding	Strategy- redirecting mother's approach	Strategy- removed staff from child when he started talking so that he wouldn't be conscious	Strategy- requested help from the Beh supp team
Strategy- reviewed IPPP	Strategy- reward with certificates	Strategy- rewarded child when she read	Strategy- sat child at front of class
Strategy- set clear boundaries	Strategy- set up training for TAs in school#	Strategy- signing, makaton	Strategy- small group work
Strategy- speech not expected	Strategy- speech scale	Strategy- spoke to previous teachers	Strategy- stickers
Strategy- TA delivered breaking barriers for SM programme	Strategy- take child to toilet	Strategy- take register differently	Strategy- talking partners
Strategy tapping into child's interest	Strategy- taught child Makaton	Strategy- taught child to sign	Strategy- teaching a range of communication skills
Strategy to calm mother	Strategy to leave child in peers	Strategy to make herself more familiar with child through mother	Strategy- trained staff not to expect speech
Strategy- transferred skills for EAL children	Strategy- transition programme	Strategy treated child the same	Strategy- trick into talking
Strategy- tried to be gentle with mother initially	Strategy- triple teaching	Strategy- taught class for two years	Strategy- TV, Tanya Byron
Strategy- use from EAL children	Strategy- used gestures	Strategy- used resources from Sparkle Box	Strategy- used teacher.org

Strategy- verbal prompts	Strategy was effective	Strategy was effective with previous mute children	Strategy- went online
Strategy when teaching- make jokes	Strategy- whiteboard	Strategy- whole class level	Strategy- whole class level encouraged pair work
Strategy worked	Strategy- writing helpful strategies down for child	Strategy-allowances so child got changed in cupboard	Strategy-build up incentives
Strategy-child to point	Strategy-counters	Strategy-drawing on other teacher's knowledge	Strategy-emailed child
Strategy-ensure child had all things he would need	Strategy-establish expectations	Strategy-extended child's range of choices	Strategy-getting cross worked
Strategy-grading system	Strategy-included child	Strategy-joking with child	Strategy-not get cross
Strategy-positive reframe, look at child's strengths	Strategy-positive reframe, celebrate child's success	Strategy-scribe for child	Strategy-support child
Strategy-treat child the same as other children	Strategy-used online teacher's resources	Strategy-used picture cards	Strategy-using IT
Strategy-working with parents	Stress	Sudden speech	Support - from parents
Support- colleagues	Support from EAL specialist teacher	Support from EP	Support from Family support worker
Support from Head	Support from LSA	Support from previous teacher	Support from previous teachers
Support from SALT	Support from school nurse	Support from SENCo	Support- from TA
Support from TAs	Support- mutual between mother and teacher	Support- school network	Support- speaking to EP
Supportive TA	Surprise	Surprised when heard child speak	Talk partners
Talking activities were hard	Talking to mother supportive	Talking to peers	Tap hand
Tapping adults	Taught child's sibling	Teacher counsellor	Teacher expectations changed
Teacher reflections- a long process	Teacher reflections- condition is very hard to understand	Teacher thought parents were in denial	Teacher training not useful
There's quite a lot of group work.	Thought- a learning experience	Thought- amazed that a person can function without speech.	Thought child's behaviour was odd
Thought- expectation	Thought- function of	Thought it was	Thought it would be

of speech	behaviour to shut himself off	horrible could not adequately differentiate	interesting
Thought- takes a lot of effort not to speak	Thought that child was exposed to age inappropriate situations	Thoughts- acceptance of mute behaviour	Thoughts- adapting to child's behaviour created chaos in pairing activity
Thoughts- how does the child do it	Thoughts- there is less information about SM	Thoughts- wanted to fix problem	Thoughts- wanted to solve the problem
Thoughts- wanted to spend more time with child one a 1 to 1 basis	Thought- it would have been easier if she just spoken	Too suffocating to have an adult always with child	Took child onto street to get her home
Training- BA Training recommendations- background information on condition	Training- BEd Training recommendations- more SEN	Training- GTP Training recommendations- strategies	Training not helpful Training was supportive
Transferable skills- working with ASD children	Transferable skills working with babies	Transferred knowledge of ASD children	Transferred skills of working with EAL children
Transition	Transition- worry	Trial and error process	Tricky managing parental recommendation of strategies
Tried to investigate child's home life	Trust	Turning point	Unmanageable literature
Unsure	Unsure about child's home life	Unsure of how to get child home	Unsure of reason for child's behaviour
Unsure of the best thing to do	Unsure of what child was saying	Unsure of where to start	Upsetting
Used a visual timetable	Used non-verbal clues	Used picture dictionaries	Used visual resources
Useful for EP to provide information on the background of the child	Useful to speak to parent	Using another child as an interpreter	Using brief sentences
Using child's name	Using peer to model	Verbal encouragement	Very frustrated
Very low academically	View that child needs to be in a smaller class	Visited siblings in other classes	Visual stimuli
Visual timetable	Vocal outside of school	Wanted additional adult support for child	Wanted more time with SALT
Wanted to make child happy	Wanted to release frustration	What she did was, she organised the	Whispering

		transition	
		programme.	
Whispering to peers	Working with outside	Worried	Worried about
	agencies		making situation
			worse
Worse thing to draw	Would not get	Would not speak in	Would not speak
attention	changed in front of	front of teacher	when an adult
	peers for PE		present

Appendix M. Themes & Sub-Themes Identified from Codes for Question 1 (How Does Working with a Selectively Mute Child Impact on a Teacher's Thoughts, Feelings and Behaviours?)

Table 1. Themes and sub-themes identified in relation to teachers' thoughts.

Code	Sub-theme	Theme
Believed child was in control	Control & manipulation	1. Causal Attributions of SM
Control & manipulation	_	
Getting one over		
Child was laughed at	Early traumatic incidents,	
Early negative childhood	transitions & negative	
experience	experiences	
Early experience, told to be		
quiet		
Experienced trauma		
Parental separation		
Teeth removed		
Trauma of first day in school		
Parental separation		
Adjusting to a new situation		
Child cried on first day		
Child scared on first day		
New setting		
Trauma of moving school		
Avoid forming relationships	Escape & avoidance	
Didn't want to speak in case		
said the wrong thing		
Doesn't want to let people		
down		
Expectations would change		
Hide away		
Purpose of mutism to be		
anonymous		
Purpose of mutism to be		
invisible		
Survival, way of coping		
To avoid answering		
questions about family		
Function of behaviour to		
avoid participation		
Child embarrassed to smile		
Child embarrassed about		
accent		
Child was embarrassed to		
speak		
Child may be conscious of		
Nepalese accent		

Did. (4.11). 1 (1.11)	I	
Didn't like sound of his voice		
Self-conscious of deep voice		
Awareness of lower		
academic abilities		
Function of behaviour to		
shut himself off		
Emotional transference of	Emotional transference	
stress from teacher to pupil	_	
Emotional transference from		
anxious parents		
For protection	Safety, security &	
Safety	protection	
Security		
Believed child was petrified	Fear & phobia	
of adults		
Phobia		
Child afraid to talk		
Worried about people's		
responses		
Worried people will laugh		
Worried about getting		
approval		
Child anxious	Child's character traits,	
Child shy	attitudes & skills	
Child was incredibly self		
conscious		
Child was quiet		
Child withdrawn		
Lack of confidence		
Child was self-conscious		
Low self-esteem		
Cultural differences		
Pattern of reluctant		
interaction with male		
teachers		
Doesn't know how to break		
cycle of behaviour		
Child had contextualised		
attitudes		
Habit		
Lack of social skills		
Didn't know how to start		
talking again		
Attributed speech to child		
feeling relaxed		
Expected child to be shy		
because sibling was shy		
Child's home life as a	Adverse home environment	

potential explanation of behaviour Home impact on school Causes of SM may be that she was living above a shop Relationship breakdown of parents Thought that child was exposed to age inappropriate situations Being rewarded for not speaking Attention seeking Initially staff reinforced mutism by not expecting speech Mother exacerbated condition Siblings spoke for child Initially staff reinforced mutism by not expecting speech Other pupils don't expect speech Peer expectations Peer's acceptance Siblings infer emotions Child spoke when with those she trusted Speech related to relationship with adult Speech due to own successful input Built up trust Expectation of speech Directive language when expecting speech Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectation that child would speak Initial expectation of speech Motivation- initially wanted to hear child speak Did not want to make it worse		ı	
Home impact on school Causes of SM may be that she was living above a shop Relationship breakdown of parents Thought that child was exposed to age inappropriate situations Being rewarded for not speaking Attention seeking Initially staff reinforced mutism by not expecting speech Mother exacerbated condition Siblings spoke for child Initially staff reinforced mutism by not expecting speech Other pupils don't expect speech Peer expectations Peer's acceptance Siblings infer emotions Child spoke when with those she trusted Speech related to relationship with adult Speech due to own successful input Built up trust Expectation of speech Directive language when expecting speech Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectation that child would speak Initial expectation of speech Motivation- initially wanted to hear child speak Did not pressurise child to speak Did not pressurise child to speak Did not want to make it worse	-		
Causes of SM may be that she was living above a shop Relationship breakdown of parents Thought that child was exposed to age inappropriate situations Being rewarded for not speaking Attention seeking Initially staff reinforced mutism by not expecting speech Mother exacerbated condition Siblings spoke for child Initially staff reinforced mutism by not expecting speech Other pupils don't expect speech Other pupils don't expect speech Siblings infer emotions Peer's acceptance Siblings infer emotions Peer's acceptance Siblings infer emotions Peer speech related to relationship with adult Speech due to own successful input Built up trust Expectation of speech Directive language when expecting speech Directive language when expecting speech Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectation that child would speak Initial expectation of speech Motivation- initially wanted to hear child speak Did not pressurise child to speak Did not want to make it worse		-	
she was living above a shop Relationship breakdown of parents Thought that child was exposed to age inappropriate situations Being rewarded for not speaking Attention seeking Initially staff reinforced mutism by not expecting speech Mother exacerbated condition Siblings spoke for child Initially staff reinforced mutism by not expecting speech Other pupils don't expect speech Peer expectations Peer's acceptance Siblings infer emotions Child spoke when with those she trusted Speech related to relationship with adult Speech due to own successful input Built up trust Expectation of speech Directive language when expecting speech Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectation that child would speak Initial expectation of speech Motivation - initially wanted to hear child speak Did not pressurise child to speak Did not want to make it worse			
Relationship breakdown of parents Thought that child was exposed to age inappropriate situations Being rewarded for not speaking Attention seeking Initially staff reinforced mutism by not expecting speech Mother exacerbated condition Siblings spoke for child Initially staff reinforced mutism by not expecting speech Other pupils don't expect speech Peer expectations Peer's acceptance Siblings infer emotions Child spoke when with those she trusted Speech related to relationship with adult Speech due to own successful input Built up trust Expectation of speech Directive language when expecting speech Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectation that child wold speak Initial expectation of speech Motivation - initially wanted to hear child speak Did not pressurise child to speak Did not pressurise child to speak Did not want to make it woose	•		
Darents Thought that child was exposed to age inappropriate situations Being rewarded for not speaking Attention seeking Initially staff reinforced mutism by not expecting speech Mother exacerbated condition Siblings spoke for child Initially staff reinforced mutism by not expecting speech Other pupils don't expect speech Peer expectations Peer's acceptance Siblings infer emotions Child spoke when with those she trusted Speech related to relationship with adult Speech due to own successful input Built up trust Expectation of speech Directive language when expecting speech Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectation that child would speak Initial expectation of speech Motivation- initially wanted to hear child speak Did not pressurise child to speak Did not pressurise child to speak Did not want to make it worse			
Thought that child was exposed to age inappropriate situations Being rewarded for not speaking Attention seeking Initially staff reinforced mutism by not expecting speech Mother exacerbated condition Siblings spoke for child Initially staff reinforced mutism by not expecting speech Other pupils don't expect speech Other pupils don't expect speech Siblings infer emotions Child spoke when with those she trusted Speech related to relationship with adult Speech due to own successful input Built up trust Expectation of speech Directive language when expecting speech Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectation that child wold speak Initial expectation of speech Motivation- initially wanted to hear child speak Did not pressurise child to speak Did not want to make it worse	-		
exposed to age inappropriate situations Being rewarded for not speaking Attention seeking Initially staff reinforced mutism by not expecting speech Mother exacerbated condition Siblings spoke for child Initially staff reinforced mutism by not expecting speech Other pupils don't expect speech Other pupils don't expect speech Peer expectations Peer's acceptance Siblings infer emotions Child spoke when with those she trusted Speech related to relationship with adult Speech due to own successful input Built up trust Expectation of speech Directive language when expecting speech Expectation that child will forget and speak Initial expectation of speech Motivation- initially wanted to hear child speak Did not pressurise child to speak Did not want to make it worse	_ 1		
situations Being rewarded for not speaking Attention seeking Initially staff reinforced mutism by not expecting speech Mother exacerbated condition Siblings spoke for child Initially staff reinforced mutism by not expecting speech Other pupils don't expect speech Peer expectations Peer's acceptance Siblings infer emotions Child spoke when with those she trusted Speech related to relationship with adult Speech due to own successful input Built up trust Expectation of speech Directive language when expecting speech Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectation that child would speak Initial expectation of speech Motivation- initially wanted to hear child speak Did not pressurise child to speak Did not want to make it worse	_		
Being rewarded for not speaking Attention seeking Initially staff reinforced mutism by not expecting speech Mother exacerbated condition Siblings spoke for child Initially staff reinforced mutism by not expecting speech Other pupils don't expect speech Peer expectations Peer's acceptance Siblings infer emotions Child spoke when with those she trusted Speech related to relationship with adult Speech due to own successful input Built up trust Expectation of speech Directive language when expecting speech Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectation that child will forget and speak Initial expectation of speech Motivation- initially wanted to hear child speak Did not pressurise child to speak Did not want to make it worse			
Speaking			
Attention seeking Initially staff reinforced mutism by not expecting speech Mother exacerbated condition Siblings spoke for child Initially staff reinforced mutism by not expecting speech Other pupils don't expect speech Peer expectations Peer's acceptance Siblings infer emotions Child spoke when with those she trusted Speech related to relationship with adult Speech due to own successful input Built up trust Expectation of speech Directive language when expecting speech Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectation that child would speak Initial expectation of speech Motivation- initially wanted to hear child speak Did not pressurise child to speak Did not want to make it worse	_	Social reinforcement	
Initially staff reinforced mutism by not expecting speech Mother exacerbated condition Siblings spoke for child Initially staff reinforced mutism by not expecting speech Other pupils don't expect speech Peer expectations Peer's acceptance Siblings infer emotions Child spoke when with those she trusted Speech related to relationship with adult Speech due to own successful input Built up trust Expectation of speech Directive language when expecting speech Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectation that child would speak Initial expectation of speech Motivation- initially wanted to hear child speak Did not pressurise child to speak Did not want to make it worse			
mutism by not expecting speech Mother exacerbated condition Siblings spoke for child Initially staff reinforced mutism by not expecting speech Other pupils don't expect speech Peer expectations Peer's acceptance Siblings infer emotions Child spoke when with those she trusted Speech related to relationship with adult Speech due to own successful input Built up trust Expectation of speech Directive language when expecting speech Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectation that child would speak Did not pressurise child to speak Did not want to make it worse			
speech Mother exacerbated condition Siblings spoke for child Initially staff reinforced mutism by not expecting speech Other pupils don't expect speech Peer expectations Peer's acceptance Siblings infer emotions Child spoke when with those she trusted Speech related to relationship with adult Speech due to own successful input Built up trust Expectation of speech Directive language when expecting speech Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectation that child would speak Initial expectation of speech Motivation- initially wanted to hear child speak Did not pressurise child to speak Did not want to make it worse	•		
Mother exacerbated condition Siblings spoke for child Initially staff reinforced mutism by not expecting speech Other pupils don't expect speech Peer expectations Peer's acceptance Siblings infer emotions Child spoke when with those she trusted Speech related to relationship with adult Speech due to own successful input Built up trust Expectation of speech Directive language when expecting speech Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectation that child would speak Initial expectation of speech Motivation- initially wanted to hear child speak Did not pressurise child to speak Did not want to make it worse			
condition Siblings spoke for child Initially staff reinforced mutism by not expecting speech Other pupils don't expect speech Peer expectations Peer's acceptance Siblings infer emotions Child spoke when with those she trusted Speech related to relationship with adult Speech due to own successful input Built up trust Expectation of speech Directive language when expecting speech Expectation that child will forget and speak Initial expectation of speech Motivation- initially wanted to hear child speak Did not pressurise child to speak Did not want to make it worse	-		
Siblings spoke for child Initially staff reinforced mutism by not expecting speech Other pupils don't expect speech Peer expectations Peer's acceptance Siblings infer emotions Child spoke when with those she trusted Speech related to relationship with adult Speech due to own successful input Built up trust Expectation of speech Directive language when expecting speech Expectation that child will forget and speak Initial expectation of speech Motivation- initially wanted to hear child speak Did not pressurise child to speak Did not want to make it worse			
Initially staff reinforced mutism by not expecting speech Other pupils don't expect speech Peer expectations Peer's acceptance Siblings infer emotions Child spoke when with those she trusted Speech related to relationship with adult Speech due to own successful input Built up trust Expectation of speech Directive language when expecting speech Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectation that child would speak Initial expectation of speech Motivation- initially wanted to hear child speak Did not pressurise child to speak Did not want to make it worse		1	
mutism by not expecting speech Other pupils don't expect speech Peer expectations Peer's acceptance Siblings infer emotions Child spoke when with those she trusted Speech related to relationship with adult Speech due to own successful input Built up trust Expectation of speech Directive language when expecting speech Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectation that child would speak Initial expectation of speech Motivation- initially wanted to hear child speak Did not pressurise child to speak Did not want to make it worse			
speech Other pupils don't expect speech Peer expectations Peer's acceptance Siblings infer emotions Child spoke when with those she trusted Speech related to relationship with adult Speech due to own successful input Built up trust Expectation of speech Directive language when expecting speech Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectation that child would speak Initial expectation of speech Motivation- initially wanted to hear child speak Did not pressurise child to speak Did not want to make it worse Z. Causal Attributions of Speech Speech 2. Causal Attributions of Speech Speech Speech Speech Speech Speech Speech expected Speech	•		
Other pupils don't expect speech Peer expectations Peer's acceptance Siblings infer emotions Child spoke when with those she trusted Speech related to relationship with adult Speech due to own successful input Built up trust Expectation of speech Directive language when expecting speech Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectation that child would speak Initial expectation of speech Motivation- initially wanted to hear child speak Did not pressurise child to speak Did not want to make it worse			
speech Peer expectations Peer's acceptance Siblings infer emotions Child spoke when with those she trusted Speech related to relationship with adult Speech due to own successful input Built up trust Expectation of speech Directive language when expecting speech Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectation that child would speak Initial expectation of speech Motivation- initially wanted to hear child speak Did not pressurise child to speak Did not want to make it worse	-		
Peer expectations Peer's acceptance Siblings infer emotions Child spoke when with those she trusted Speech related to relationship with adult Speech due to own successful input Built up trust Expectation of speech Directive language when expecting speech Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectation that child would speak Initial expectation of speech Motivation- initially wanted to hear child speak Did not pressurise child to speak Did not want to make it worse			
Peer's acceptance Siblings infer emotions Child spoke when with those she trusted Speech related to relationship with adult Speech due to own successful input Built up trust Expectation of speech Directive language when expecting speech Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectation that child would speak Initial expectation of speech Motivation- initially wanted to hear child speak Did not pressurise child to speak Did not want to make it worse 2. Causal Attributions of Speech Speech Speech Speech Speech Speech 3. Expectations	Peer expectations		
Siblings infer emotions Child spoke when with those she trusted Speech related to relationship with adult Speech due to own successful input Built up trust Expectation of speech Directive language when expecting speech Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectation that child would speak Initial expectation of speech Motivation- initially wanted to hear child speak Did not pressurise child to speak Did not want to make it worse 2. Causal Attributions of Speech Speech Speech 3. Expectations			
Child spoke when with those she trusted Speech related to relationship with adult Speech due to own successful input Built up trust Expectation of speech Directive language when expecting speech Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectation that child would speak Initial expectation of speech Motivation- initially wanted to hear child speak Did not pressurise child to speak Did not want to make it worse 2. Causal Attributions of Speech Speech Speech 3. Expectations			
Speech related to relationship with adult Speech due to own successful input Built up trust Expectation of speech Directive language when expecting speech Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectation that child would speak Initial expectation of speech Motivation- initially wanted to hear child speak Did not pressurise child to speak Did not want to make it worse Speech Speech Speech 3. Expectations			2. Causal Attributions of
Speech related to relationship with adult Speech due to own successful input Built up trust Expectation of speech Directive language when expecting speech Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectation that child would speak Initial expectation of speech Motivation- initially wanted to hear child speak Did not pressurise child to speak Did not want to make it worse Speech expected 3. Expectations Speech expected Speech expected	-		
relationship with adult Speech due to own successful input Built up trust Expectation of speech Directive language when expecting speech Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectation that child would speak Initial expectation of speech Motivation- initially wanted to hear child speak Did not pressurise child to speak Did not want to make it worse Speech expected 3. Expectations	Speech related to		•
Speech due to own successful input Built up trust Expectation of speech Directive language when expecting speech Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectation that child would speak Initial expectation of speech Motivation- initially wanted to hear child speak Did not pressurise child to speak Did not want to make it worse Speech expected 3. Expectations Speech expected Speech			
Built up trust Expectation of speech Directive language when expecting speech Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectation that child would speak Initial expectation of speech Motivation- initially wanted to hear child speak Did not pressurise child to speak Did not want to make it worse Speech expected 3. Expectations Speech expected Speech expected Speech expected Speech expected Speech expected Speech expectations Speech expected Speec	-		
Built up trust Expectation of speech Directive language when expecting speech Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectation that child would speak Initial expectation of speech Motivation- initially wanted to hear child speak Did not pressurise child to speak Did not want to make it worse Speech expected 3. Expectations	relationship with adult		
Expectation of speech Directive language when expecting speech Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectation that child would speak Initial expectation of speech Motivation- initially wanted to hear child speak Did not pressurise child to speak Did not want to make it worse Speech expected 3. Expectations Speech expected	relationship with adult Speech due to own		
Directive language when expecting speech Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectation that child would speak Initial expectation of speech Motivation- initially wanted to hear child speak Did not pressurise child to speak Did not want to make it worse	relationship with adult Speech due to own successful input		
expectation that child will forget and speak Expectation that child would speak Initial expectation of speech Motivation- initially wanted to hear child speak Did not pressurise child to speak Did not want to make it worse	relationship with adult Speech due to own successful input Built up trust	Speech expected	3. Expectations
Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectation that child would speak Initial expectation of speech Motivation- initially wanted to hear child speak Did not pressurise child to speak Did not want to make it worse	relationship with adult Speech due to own successful input Built up trust Expectation of speech	Speech expected	3. Expectations
forget and speak Expectation that child would speak Initial expectation of speech Motivation- initially wanted to hear child speak Did not pressurise child to speak Did not want to make it worse	relationship with adult Speech due to own successful input Built up trust Expectation of speech Directive language when	Speech expected	3. Expectations
Expectation that child would speak Initial expectation of speech Motivation- initially wanted to hear child speak Did not pressurise child to speak Did not want to make it worse	relationship with adult Speech due to own successful input Built up trust Expectation of speech Directive language when expecting speech	Speech expected	3. Expectations
Initial expectation of speech Motivation- initially wanted to hear child speak Did not pressurise child to speak Did not want to make it worse	relationship with adult Speech due to own successful input Built up trust Expectation of speech Directive language when expecting speech Expectation that child will	Speech expected	3. Expectations
Initial expectation of speech Motivation- initially wanted to hear child speak Did not pressurise child to speak Did not want to make it worse	relationship with adult Speech due to own successful input Built up trust Expectation of speech Directive language when expecting speech Expectation that child will forget and speak	Speech expected	3. Expectations
Motivation- initially wanted to hear child speak Did not pressurise child to speak Did not want to make it worse Speech not expected	relationship with adult Speech due to own successful input Built up trust Expectation of speech Directive language when expecting speech Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectation that child would	Speech expected	3. Expectations
Did not pressurise child to speak Did not want to make it worse	relationship with adult Speech due to own successful input Built up trust Expectation of speech Directive language when expecting speech Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectation that child would speak	Speech expected	3. Expectations
speak Did not want to make it worse	relationship with adult Speech due to own successful input Built up trust Expectation of speech Directive language when expecting speech Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectation that child would speak Initial expectation of speech	Speech expected	3. Expectations
speak Did not want to make it worse	relationship with adult Speech due to own successful input Built up trust Expectation of speech Directive language when expecting speech Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectation that child would speak Initial expectation of speech Motivation- initially wanted	Speech expected	3. Expectations
worse	relationship with adult Speech due to own successful input Built up trust Expectation of speech Directive language when expecting speech Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectation that child would speak Initial expectation of speech Motivation- initially wanted to hear child speak		3. Expectations
	relationship with adult Speech due to own successful input Built up trust Expectation of speech Directive language when expecting speech Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectation that child would speak Initial expectation of speech Motivation- initially wanted to hear child speak Did not pressurise child to		3. Expectations
Did not want to single child	relationship with adult Speech due to own successful input Built up trust Expectation of speech Directive language when expecting speech Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectation that child would speak Initial expectation of speech Motivation- initially wanted to hear child speak Did not pressurise child to speak		3. Expectations
<u> </u>	relationship with adult Speech due to own successful input Built up trust Expectation of speech Directive language when expecting speech Expectation that child will forget and speak Expectation that child would speak Initial expectation of speech Motivation- initially wanted to hear child speak Did not pressurise child to speak Did not want to make it		3. Expectations

out	
Acceptance of lack of speech	
Expectation that child won't	
speak	
Expectations set by outside	
professionals	
No expectation of speech	
Did not expect speech	
Speech not expected	
Acceptance of mute	
behaviour	4.7
Child - good sense of	4. Perceptions of the
humour	Selectively Mute Child
Child an excellent team	
player	
Child became more	
confident over year	
Child clever	
Child bubbly	
Cheeky	
Child creative	
Child does not cause trouble	
Child not shy	
Child sporty	
Child very able	
Child very polite	
Child was patient	
Gentle giant	
Happy child	
Intelligent	
Nice lad	
Perception - child was lovely	
Thought child's behaviour	
was odd	
Child frustrated	5. Participants' Projections of
Child felt pressurised	the Selectively Mute Child's
Perception that child viewed	Experiences
her as an ally	· ·
Worried about getting	
people's approval	
Worried about people's	
responses	
Worried people will laugh	
Parents open	6. Perception of Parents
Mother was very good	or i croopion or i urents
Parent bossy	
Teacher thought parents	
were in denial	
were in demai	

Pressure from parents		
Parent verbally aggressive	1	
Parent's reaction- surprise		7. Participants' Projections of
that child didn't speak in		Parents' Experiences
school		Tarenes Experiences
Mother felt criticised	1	
Parents potentially anxious	+	
about being judged		
Parent relieved	-	
	-	
Parents pleased with		
progress Mother frustrated	-	
	-	
Mother very anxious	-	
Mother was worried	-	
Parent expectation that child		
would grow out of it	-	
Parent frustrated	-	
Parent more concerned when		
child in school	-	
Parents wanted a label	_	
Parents worried- fear of		
labelling	_	
Sibling communicated softly		
Sibling led adults		8. Perception of the
Sibling had limited eye		Selectively Mute Child's
contact		Sibling
Sibling pointed		
Sibling shy		
Sibling took a long time to		
be confident		
Sibling very low		
academically	_	
Sibling very quiet	_	
Sibling was also mute	_	
Sibling-no eye contact	_	
Sibling speaks more	_	
Sibling confident	_	
Sibling had a wider		
vocabulary	_	
Sibling responsive	_	
Sibling was a bit bossy		
Sibling would smile		
Sibling's communication fine		
Reassured parents	More approachable &	9. Impact on role
More patient	reassuring	
Approachable to parents		
Had to become more patient		
Tried to calm mother		
Nurturing role	Mothering, caring,	

Coring motostive rela	mantania a Parantantia a	
Caring, protective role	nurturing & protecting	
Role identity mothering More protective		
More protective		
Nurturing		
Nurturing approach		
Shared teaching plans with	Educating, advising &	
TA	training	
Role to educate others	_	
Handover with child's next		
teacher		
Instructed staff not to put		
pressure on the child to		
speak Instructed staff to act normal		
Instructed staff to act normal		
when child spoke		
Set up training for TAs in school		
Trained staff not to expect		
speech		
Promoting child's assertive		
skills		
Advising parents		
Giving advice to teachers		
Advice giving		
Insight impacted on teaching	More aware, skilled &	
strategy	adaptable	
More adaptable		
Additional skills and training		
for all		
Become more insightful		
Role enabling children to		
communicate in a range of		
ways		
More assertive and firm with		
staff		
Increased awareness		
Less professional		
More attentive to non-verbal		
communication		
More flexible		
More knowledgeable		
More relaxed approach		
Became more observant		
A learning experience of		
different ways to		
communicate		
	†	
Developed better time management skills		

Became more accepting		
Investigating	Investigative & problem solving	
Investigator	sorving	
Problem solver		
Wanted to fix problem		
Limited role	Limited, inadequate &	
Child speaking linked to role identity	lacking autonomy	
Felt inadequate		
Low priority when spoke to SENCo		
Other children prioritised		
When teaching spread thinly		
Felt like a failure		
Felt limited in her teaching		
ability		
Felt stretched		
EP as intermediary &	Facilitating processes	10. Perceptions of EP's Role
facilitator		
Role of EP- facilitated		
referral process		
EP role- facilitating		
statementing procedure	Implementing & modelling	
EP ran sliding in technique	Implementing & modelling intervention programmes	
EP modelled sliding in technique	intervention programmes	
EP observation	Observing, assessing &	
EP assessments	diagnosing	
EP diagnosis		
EP did a home visit		
EP allocation controlled by	Lack of autonomy over	
LEA	work	
SENCo controls EP time		
Perception of EP to	Gatekeeper to resources	
accessing resources		

Table 2. Themes and sub-themes identified in relation to teacher's feelings.

Code	Sub-theme	Theme
Experience rewarding	Pleased, rewarded & proud	11. Positive Feelings
Felt really nice to hear child speak		
Felt pleased when child spoke		
Satisfaction when child spoke		
Felt proud		
Felt uplifted when child spoke		
SENCo- delivered sliding in technique	Supported	
SENCo- provided literature	1 11	
SENCo- ran social skills group		
SENCo researched condition and		
provided more info		
SENCo- spoke to people in LA		
SENCo- supportive and feeds back		
from courses		
Support from colleagues		
Support from EAL specialist teacher		
Support from EP		
Support from family support worker		
Support from head		
Support from Learning Support		
Assistants or Teaching Assistants		
Support from previous teachers		
Support from school nurse		
Support from SENCo		
Support mutual between mother and		
teacher		
Support from school network		
Talking to mother supportive		
Felt a sense of achievement	Sense of achievement & relief	
Felt relieved when child spoke		_
Felt enthusiastic	Excited, happy & enthusiastic	
Felt excited	_	
Felt happy to have child in her class	_	
Thought it would be interesting		_
Felt amazed when child spoke	Amazed & surprised	
Surprise	4	
Surprised when heard child speak	4	
Amazed that a person can function		
without speech	Empethy & wounth	-
Felt empathic Felt frustrated for child	Empathy & warmth	
Felt good for child	-	
<u> </u>	-	
Felt pleased for child Felt warmth towards child	-	
Frustrated for child	-	
Frustrated for child Frustrated that child reverted to mutism	+	
riustrated that child reverted to mutism		

the next year		
Felt hopeful (for speech)	Hopeful	
Hopeful when child showed signs of		
pre-speech		
Not concerned about child	Unconcerned, not worried	
Not frustrating		
		12. Negative Feelings
Felt frustrated	Emistrated anxious warnied	-
Felt frustrated at mother because	Frustrated, anxious, worried, concerned & stressed	
wouldn't listen to her	concerned & suessed	
Felt frustrated because child getting	1	
conflicting messages		
Frustrated at mother	-	
Felt uptight		
Stress	-	
Frustrated because couldn't get through		
to mother		
Lack of time to work 1 to 1 with child	1	
Concern	1	
Anxious		
Concern about the future		
Concerned about child's home life		
Concerned about strange videos		
displayed in family shop		
Concerned about younger sibling's		
school absence		
Concerned that cause of SM was		
problem at home	4	
Concerned that family shop sold		
Concerned that there were stronge	-	
Concerned that there were strange people who entered the family shop		
Conflicted about labelling	1	
Felt concern about how child would	1	
cope		
Felt concerned about assessment	1	
Felt worried	1	
Felt worried about workload	1	
Labelling	1	
Against wrongly labelling child	1	
0		

Parents wanted a label		
Worried about transition	-	
Worried Worried	-	
	-	
Worried about making situation worse	C1 11 1 1 1 1	
Challenging	Challenged, panicked,	
Felt challenged	apprehensive, daunted,	
Felt daunted	pressured & overwhelmed	
Felt overwhelmed		
Felt apprehensive	_	
Felt panicked		
Felt pressured		
Assessment challenging & difficult		
Panicked due to lack of experience		
Talking activities were hard		
Adapting to child's behaviour created		
chaos in pairing activity		
Felt unsupported	Unsupported	
Felt unsupported -Help from an EP		
would have been appreciated		
Wanted additional adult support for		
child		
Received conflicting advice	Uncertain, unprepared &	
Felt confused by the child's behaviour	confused	
Felt unprepared from teacher training		
Felt unprepared		
Felt unsure		
Initially unsure of cause	1	
Lack of clarity as to child's speech		
status		
Lack of understanding regarding cause		
of SM		
Received conflicting advice		
Trial and error process		
Unsure of reason for child's behaviour	1	
Unsure of the best thing to do	-	
Unsure of where to start	†	
Disappointment at not fixing problem	Disappointed, sad & upset	
Felt sad		
Upsetting	†	
Felt heartbroken	†	
Pity	†	
Felt guilty	Guilt	
Felt really bad	Junt	
Perceived guilt over selfishness	-	
Made a fuss of child and made him	-	
withdraw more		
Set child back	-	
	-	
Strategy exacerbated behaviour		

Strategy not effective		
Felt responsible (for child's lack of		
progress)		
Felt responsible for putting child back		
When teaching spread thinly		
Felt angry at parent	Anger	

Table 3. Themes and sub-themes identified in relation to teacher's behaviours.

Asked mother to bring in Nepalese		13. Promoted use of
books		Child's First Language
Encourage child to read books in first	7	3 3
language		
Encourage child to speak first language	7	
in class		
Read books in child's language		
Smiled at child		14. Praise, Reward &
Encouraging		Reinforcement
Extra encouragement		
Extra praise		
Stickers		
Praise		
Reward with certificates		
Rewarded child when she read		
Verbal encouragement		
Giving time for child to answer		15. Individualised
Minimising choices	7	Teaching Adaptations
Partner work	7	
Strategy to prepare child	1	
Negotiation with child, if and then		
statements		
Strategy to increase child's confidence	1	
Careful pairing		
Child seated behind teacher	7	
Differentiation	7	
Double teaching	7	
Gave child jobs or responsibilities	7	
Gave child parts that didn't require	7	
speech		
Gave child small targets	7	
Gentle approach	7	
Gentle persuasion	7	
Group work	7	
Guided child to gentler children	7	
Highlighted child's strengths	7	
Incorporated social activities	7	
Memory games	7	
Modelling	1	
Gave more thinking time	1	
Pair work]	
Pairing effectively	1	
Parallel play	1	
Presented information visually	1	
Prioritised child answering questions	1	
Prompted child	1	
1	1	

Provided choices		
Questioning to elicit understanding	,	
Sat child at front of class	,	
Talking partners	,	
Trick child into talking	,	
Triple teaching	,	
Verbal prompts		
Make jokes		
Making allowances so child got		
changed in cupboard		
Build up incentives		
Extended child's range of choices		
Getting cross worked		
Positive reframe, look at child's		
strengths		
Using brief sentences		
Using child's name	,	
Draw pictures		16. Promoting Non-verbal
Encouraged child to point to		Communication
communicate		0 0 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1
Gave child cards		
Mini-cards		
Pictures		
Raise hand		
Offered alternative means of		
communicating		
Cards		
Child to raise hand		
Child wrote it down		
Created pictures for child		
Encouraged child to point		
Encouraged non-verbal communication		
Lip read		
Thumbs up		
Offering non-verbal responses during		
registration		
Signing, Makaton		
Take register differently		
Used gestures		
Whiteboard		
Emailed child	,	
Grading system	,	
Scribe for child		
Used a visual timetable	,	
Used picture dictionaries		
Following resource manuals		17. Delivering
Sliding in technique was effective	,	Intervention Programmes
Sliding in technique		& Techniques (EEL

Transition programme	technique, sliding in
Used counters	technique, transition
	programme)
Brought siblings into class	18. Utilising or
Child gave answer to friend	Discouraging the use of
Introducing child with SM to another	Intermediaries
Nepalese child	
Mediating through a child	
Peers as intermediaries	
Encouraged child to speak to sibling	
Encouraged child to whisper to friend	
Discourage friend speaking for child	
Discouraged peers speaking for child	
Using another child as an interpreter	
Sat child next to TA	19. Provided Additional
Provided additional TA support	Resources for Child
Created and reviewed an Individual	
Pupil Provision Plan (IPPP)	
Providing peer mentors	
Linked with EAL	20. Utilised Transferable
Applied techniques from ASD training	Skills
Transferred skills of working with EAL	
children	
Transferable skills of working with	
ASD children	
Transferable skills working with babies	
Inclusive strategy	21. Inclusive & Uniform,
Not make a fuss	Whole-Class Strategies
Did not want to appear to select one	
particular child for special treatment	
Strategy told child to be quiet	
Strategy aimed at whole class level	
Creating a safe learning environment	
Set clear boundaries	
Strategy to treat child the same	
Establish whole class expectations	
Strategy-included child	
Helpful- internet	22. Information Seeking
It was a matter of me going online and	
looking up	
Sought background information on	
child	
Asked friends how they communicated	
with child	
Called home to ask what he knew	
Contacted previous school	
Background information helpful	
Information passed over from Nursery	

Used google	
Used internet	
TV	
Used resources from Sparkle Box	
Used teacher.org	
Went online	
Drawing on other teacher's knowledge	
Used online teacher's resources	
Previous knowledge of child	
Prior knowledge	
Ignored child	23. Ignoring
Ignoring goes against wishes	
Ignoring the child helped them	
Avoided looking at child directly	
Pretend child is invisible	
Avoided eye contact	
Not draw attention to child	

Appendix N. Themes & Sub-Themes Identified from Codes for Question 2 (Do Teachers' Thoughts, Feelings & Behaviours Change & Develop Over Time?)

Code	Sub-theme	Theme
Acceptance of mutism over time		24. Development of
Expected more speech over time		Thoughts
Expected more speech over time Expectations changed		
Increased expectations over time		
Priorities changed		
Shift in attitude		
Teacher expectations changed speech		
not expected		
Began frustrated then more	Decreased frustration &	25. Development of
understanding	apprehension	Feelings
Apprehension lessened		
Teacher relaxed over year		
Less frustrated at end of year		
Felt more positive towards the end	Increased positivity,	1
Increased in confidence over time	confidence & sympathy	
Increased positivity		
Felt sympathetic over time		
Strategies did not change over time	Strategies remained the same	26. Development of
Changed strategy & later gave choices	Strategies changed	Behaviours
Became more persistent over time		
Gradual removal of strategies		
Gradually increased physical proximity		
Withdrawal of strategies over time		
Strategy changed over time- stopped		
trying to trick child		
Gradually added words to gestures		
Strategy made child cry & changed		
over time		
Strategy made child more shy so		
changed		
Strategy- tried to be gentle with mother		
initially		
Withdrawal of strategies over time		

Appendix O. Themes & Sub-Themes Identified from Codes for Question 3 (What Mediating Factors Influence the Kinds of Experiences Teachers Have?)

Code	Sub-theme	Theme
Drew on previous experiences		27. Previous Experiences
Expectation that child would be like	1	of Working with a
previous children but took longer to		Selectively Mute Child
speak		
Felt it was harder work		
Strategy was effective with previous		
mute children		
Experience useful	1	
Experiences of working with SM child]	
useful		
Future expectation-more realistic		
Future experiences- less expectation of		
speech		
Future experiences- more patient	_	
Future- may need to be more reflective		
of practice	_	
Future- would be more confident		
If taught in future remain hopeful		
Importance of background information		
Positive experience		
Previous experience- future less		
apprehensive		
Attachment linked to development of		28. Attachment Levels
relationships		
Built up trust		
Long term interest in child's welfare		
Prolonged awareness and involvement		
with child		
Prolonged contact with parent		
Autism training helpful		29. Access to Support &
CPD- training on ASD	_	Training
EAL resources as a support	_	
EAL training helpful	_	
Received training to reduce child's		
anxiety		
Training not helpful		
Daily communication with parents	Engaged & supportive	30. Levels of Parental
Feedback from parents		Engagement
Good communication with mother	1	
Good relationship with parents		
Information sharing with parents		
Long term good relationship with		
parents	-	
Mother very involved		

Downt on good		T
Parent engaged	-	
Good communication with parents	-	
Got parents in to read to child	-	
Mother came into school		
Child not collected after school by	Non-engaged, avoidant &	
parents	exacerbating	
Child's parents did not answer phone	-	
Difficulties accessing information from		
parents	-	
Father had fallen asleep	-	
Felt professional opinion was less		
respected	-	
Language barrier in communicating		
with parents & not attendance at		
parent's evening	-	
Mother exacerbated condition	-	
Mother nagged child to speak	-	
Parent not doing what was asked in		
School Perent put pressure en skild to speek	-	
Parent put pressure on child to speak	-	
Parent insistent for child to speak at		
school Evoluding perent	-	
Excluding parent	Communicated with to a han	21 1
Child began assisted and no	Communicated with teacher	31. Levels of Child
Child began saying odd words	verbally	Engagement
the Mark of Mark of the Control		
Child read aloud	-	
Child spoke over time		
Child spoke over time Child spoke to teacher		
Child spoke over time Child spoke to teacher Child will say routine things		
Child spoke over time Child spoke to teacher Child will say routine things Child's communication increased over		
Child spoke over time Child spoke to teacher Child will say routine things Child's communication increased over time		
Child spoke over time Child spoke to teacher Child will say routine things Child's communication increased over time Development of child's behaviour over		
Child spoke over time Child spoke to teacher Child will say routine things Child's communication increased over time Development of child's behaviour over year- from no speech to whispering		
Child spoke over time Child spoke to teacher Child will say routine things Child's communication increased over time Development of child's behaviour over year- from no speech to whispering One word responses		
Child spoke over time Child spoke to teacher Child will say routine things Child's communication increased over time Development of child's behaviour over year- from no speech to whispering One word responses Spoke to teacher		
Child spoke over time Child spoke to teacher Child will say routine things Child's communication increased over time Development of child's behaviour over year- from no speech to whispering One word responses Spoke to teacher Spontaneous initial speech		
Child spoke over time Child spoke to teacher Child will say routine things Child's communication increased over time Development of child's behaviour over year- from no speech to whispering One word responses Spoke to teacher Spontaneous initial speech Whispering	Communicated with teacher	
Child spoke over time Child spoke to teacher Child will say routine things Child's communication increased over time Development of child's behaviour over year- from no speech to whispering One word responses Spoke to teacher Spontaneous initial speech Whispering Child sometimes smiled	Communicated with teacher	
Child spoke over time Child spoke to teacher Child will say routine things Child's communication increased over time Development of child's behaviour over year- from no speech to whispering One word responses Spoke to teacher Spontaneous initial speech Whispering Child sometimes smiled Child communicated by facial	Communicated with teacher non-verbally	
Child spoke over time Child spoke to teacher Child will say routine things Child's communication increased over time Development of child's behaviour over year- from no speech to whispering One word responses Spoke to teacher Spontaneous initial speech Whispering Child sometimes smiled Child communicated by facial expressions	₫	
Child spoke over time Child spoke to teacher Child will say routine things Child's communication increased over time Development of child's behaviour over year- from no speech to whispering One word responses Spoke to teacher Spontaneous initial speech Whispering Child sometimes smiled Child communicated by facial expressions Child communicated with actions	₫	
Child spoke over time Child spoke to teacher Child will say routine things Child's communication increased over time Development of child's behaviour over year- from no speech to whispering One word responses Spoke to teacher Spontaneous initial speech Whispering Child sometimes smiled Child communicated by facial expressions Child does not cause trouble	₫	
Child spoke over time Child spoke to teacher Child will say routine things Child's communication increased over time Development of child's behaviour over year- from no speech to whispering One word responses Spoke to teacher Spontaneous initial speech Whispering Child sometimes smiled Child communicated by facial expressions Child communicated with actions Child does not cause trouble Child gave eye contact when wanted to	₫	
Child spoke over time Child spoke to teacher Child will say routine things Child's communication increased over time Development of child's behaviour over year- from no speech to whispering One word responses Spoke to teacher Spontaneous initial speech Whispering Child sometimes smiled Child communicated by facial expressions Child communicated with actions Child does not cause trouble Child gave eye contact when wanted to communicate	₫	
Child spoke over time Child spoke to teacher Child will say routine things Child's communication increased over time Development of child's behaviour over year- from no speech to whispering One word responses Spoke to teacher Spontaneous initial speech Whispering Child sometimes smiled Child communicated by facial expressions Child communicated with actions Child does not cause trouble Child gave eye contact when wanted to communicate Child gestured	₫	
Child spoke over time Child spoke to teacher Child will say routine things Child's communication increased over time Development of child's behaviour over year- from no speech to whispering One word responses Spoke to teacher Spontaneous initial speech Whispering Child sometimes smiled Child communicated by facial expressions Child communicated with actions Child does not cause trouble Child gave eye contact when wanted to communicate Child gestured Child mouthed words	₫	
Child spoke over time Child spoke to teacher Child will say routine things Child's communication increased over time Development of child's behaviour over year- from no speech to whispering One word responses Spoke to teacher Spontaneous initial speech Whispering Child sometimes smiled Child communicated by facial expressions Child communicated with actions Child does not cause trouble Child gave eye contact when wanted to communicate Child gestured Child mouthed words Child pretended to talk	₫	
Child spoke over time Child spoke to teacher Child will say routine things Child's communication increased over time Development of child's behaviour over year- from no speech to whispering One word responses Spoke to teacher Spontaneous initial speech Whispering Child sometimes smiled Child communicated by facial expressions Child communicated with actions Child does not cause trouble Child gave eye contact when wanted to communicate Child gestured Child mouthed words	₫	

Child sometimes smiled		
Child sometimes smiled	-	
Child stroked teacher's back	-	
Child tapped teacher	4	
Child touched teacher's arm	_	
Child used hand signals	_	
Child using a type of sign language	_	
Child waved to teacher		
Child wrote on whiteboard		
Cuddled		
Facial expressions		
Giggled		
Leading adults		
Nodding		
Non-verbal joking- child would pull		
faces	_	
Shake head	_	
Smiling	_	
Tap hand		
Child does not communicate to go to	Did not communicate with	
the toilet	teacher	
Child expressionless		
Child initially unresponsive		
Child lack of overt emotion		
Child passive		
Child remained mute through the year		
Child retreat into her shell		
Child would not speak to teacher		
Few facial expressions		
Like a marionette puppet		
No communication from child		
No speech		
Animated with friends	Communicated with peers &	
Child communicated with brother	siblings in school	
Child dependent on 1 boy		
Child had core group of friends	-	
Child had one specific friend	-	
Child smiled at friends	-	
Child spoke in a louder voice with	†	
peers		
Child spoke only to other children	†	
Child spoke through friend	†	
Child spoke to 1 peer	†	
Child whispers to friend	†	
One main friend	†	
Parallel play with peers	 	
Child spoke to peers	-	
Talking to peers	-	
Child only spoke to girls	- 	
Cinia only spoke to giris		

Whispering to peers		
Child with SM would not communicate	Did not communicate with	1
with peer	certain groups & individuals	
No communication with peers		
No connection between siblings	1	
No eye contact with peers	1	
Child communicated more with TA	Communicated with key adults	
than teacher	in school	
Child spoke in a quieter voice to adults	1	
Child spoke to adults before peers	1	
Child spoke to TA		
Tapping adults	1	
Child read to TA once		
More talking to parents in Reception	Nursery versus Primary	32. Context
Nursery setting		
Child closed down in Maths	Lesson/subject	1
Child more engaged during role play		
Child more talkative in creative	1	
subjects		
Child more likely to engage in subjects	1	
when no wrong answer		
Child's behaviour changed in Maths-	1	
more engaged		
More engaged in tactile activities	1	
Mutism consistent in all subjects]	
Child spoke in the playground	Location in school	
Child would not speak once entered		
school gate		
Child would stop speaking when an		
adult was near		
BSO provided support and advice	Useful	33. Involvement with
EP did a great job		Outside Agencies
EP was very good		
SALT support		
Specialist Literacy teacher		
Support from EP		
Support from Family support worker		
Teacher counsellor	_	
Useful for EP to provide information on		
the background of the child		_
Frustration working with SALT	Not useful	
Lots of information to read- lack of		
time	_	
No feedback from social services		
regarding application of child		
protection papers	-	
Not informed of from social services		
what happened		

Not useful to have lots of reading materials
Nothing much gets done until later
down the line
Social services no follow up

Appendix P. The Final 33 Themes Identified from the Data Set & Explanation of Theme

Contents

Theme Name	Theme Content
1. Causal Attributions of SM	Participants' beliefs regarding the causes and contributing
	factors to the child's SM
2. Causal Attributions of	Participants' beliefs regarding the causes and reasons for the
Speech	selectively mute child beginning to speak
3. Expectations	Participants' expectations when they first began working with
	the selectively mute child
4. Perceptions of Child	Participants' perceptions of the selectively mute child
5. Participants' Projections of	Participants' projected views of the selectively mute child's
Child's Perceptions	constructions of events
6. Perception of Parents	Participants' perceptions of the selectively mute child's
	parents
7. Participants' Projections of	Participants' projected views of the selectively mute child's
Parents' Perceptions	parents' constructions of events
8. Perception of the Selectively	Participants' perceptions of the selectively mute child's
Mute Child's Sibling	sibling
9. Impact on Role	Participants' views of the impact of their teaching experiences
	on their role
10. Perceptions of EP's Role	Participants' perceptions of the EP's role
11. Positive Feelings	Participants' positive feelings elicited from working with the
	selectively mute child
12. Negative Feelings	Participants' negative feelings elicited from working with the
	selectively mute child
13. Promoted use of Child's	Participants promoted the use of the selectively mute child's
First Language	first language in school
14. Praise, Reward &	Participants offered praise, reward and reinforcement to
Reinforcement	encourage the selectively mute child to speak
15. Individualised Teaching	Participants utilised individualised teaching strategies aimed
Adaptations 16 Promoting Non-youthal	specifically at the selectively mute child
16. Promoting Non-verbal Communication	Participants promoted non-verbal methods of communicating with the child
17. Delivering Intervention	Participants employed a range of techniques and programmes
Programmes & Techniques	aimed to encourage the selectively mute child to speak and
(EEL technique, sliding in	promote their emotional well-being
technique, transition	promote their emotional wen-being
programme)	
18. Utilising or Discouraging	Participants utilised intermediaries such as the child's peers or
the use of Intermediaries	siblings and other significant adults or discouraged the use of
	intermediaries
19. Provided Additional	Participants provided additional resources for the selectively
Resources for Child	mute child
20. Utilised Transferable Skills	Participants utilised their transferable skills and experiences
	from working with other children and applied them when
	working with the selectively mute child
21. Inclusive & Uniform,	The strategies participants utilised were uniform and aimed at

Whole-Class Strategies	a whole-class level
22. Information Seeking	Participants sought information regarding the SM and
	strategies to ameliorate it from a range of sources
23. Ignoring	Participants ignored the mute behaviour and tried not to draw
	attention to the child
24. Development of Thoughts	The development of participant's thoughts over the course of
	working with the selectively mute child
25. Development of Feelings	The development of participant's feelings over the course of
	working with the selectively mute child
26. Development of Behaviours	The development of participant's behaviours over the course
	of working with the selectively mute child
27. Previous Experiences of	Participant's previous experiences of working with a
Working with a Selectively	selectively mute child
Mute Child	
28. Attachment levels	The level of teacher-pupil attachment levels
29. Access to Support &	Participants' access to support and training
Training	
30. Levels of Parental	Participants' experiences of the levels of parental engagement
Engagement	over the course of working with the selectively mute child
31. Levels of the Child's	Participants' experiences of the levels of the selectively mute
Engagement	child's engagement over the course of working with them
32. Context	Participants' experiences of the different contexts and the
	mediation on their experiences during their work with the
	selectively mute child
33. Involvement with Outside	Participants' involvement with outside agencies during the
Agencies	course of their work with the selectively mute child